



For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends. Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

Introduction

It did not take me long to realize that in life other People are born with a silver spoon in their mouths, whilst others had to work hard to be where they are today. Under those two Categories i fall under those who always had to work hard to get what they want and needed in life.

I wish i knew then what i know now, that you do not need a million to wake up everyday with a smile on your face, all you need is to just be content with what you have money is not the foundation of happiness believe me. Once you make money a need in your life then you will never be happy, rather focus more on the priceless moments you share with your loved ones than the money that fails to keep you company while your heart is empty. Let's be honest, if money was everything that mattered in life then why do the rich result to drugs for comfort? Why do the rich end up prematurely taking their own

lives, shouldn't money make their lives a bit easier since they can afford what some of us dream of affording??

The biggest mistake i did was to follow the path that was laid out for me in a red carpet full of rose petals, but along the way those rose petals turned into thorns that pierced my gentle feet. The cherry to my pain was when i turned around to look back at the person who had laid down those petals for me, and he was no longer an angel that he was when i first started walking on the red carpet but he turned into a cold hearted demon that hell couldn't even keep i trusted him when he said "i will give you everything that your heart desires everything that you ever wished of having" and he did give me all, but he gave me all and more...

I didn't know that it was possible to fall for a heartless person, the devil himself. I truly thought that i would change him, i truly thought that giving him my heart, my soul, and my whole being would change him but then a serpent will always be a serpent. No matter how you can be fond of a snake at the end it will bite you because that is what it was created for, look at what the serpent did to Adam and Eve in the garden of eden. I wish that i could've tripped over love 'cause then it would have been easy for me to get up and dust myself but, i fell inlove and i fell in too deep that i couldn't get up. He possessed my soul, then after he sent me straight to hell!!..

I am currently serving 2 years of my life sentence imprisonment in a prison that's in Mexico, a country far away from home far away from the people who loved me. Before i can be deployed back to my home country South Africa, where i will serve the remainder of my sentence i will have to serve at least 12 years here in Mexico since i committed the crime here. I was initially given a death sentence, but then the South African embassy came through for me, the Mexican authorities made sure that even when i go home i don't get freedom i will serve my life sentence without the possibility of parole..

I AM THERESA MENDOZA, AND MY STORY IS ONE OF A KIND.

1

THERESA

Voice: Terry wake up!.. Theresa wake up i am going to be late for school again!!!

In my deepest sleep i heard a small voice waking me up and small hands shaking me. I slowly opened my eyes and it was my little sister Zerra, she is 7 years old and a bit of a pain in the butt..

Zerra: Wake up Theresa!

I turned and looked at her..

Me: what's wrong with you?

Zerra: i am going to be late for school again

Me: Today it's a holiday you not supposed to go to school

Zerra: My Teacher said the public holiday is tomorrow

Me: is it?

She nodded.....

Me: goodness me!

I looked at the time and it was already late i cannot prepare her for school she was supposed to be at school 30min ago..

Me: you will have to miss school today ill talk to your teacher tomorrow

She folded her arms..

Zerra: i am always missing school it's not fair! (frowning)

Me: Zerra there's nothing i can do i overslept

Today i was feeling very sick i had this wheezing sound on my chest everytime when i tried to breath and i had chest pains too. I get very worried when i get sick because i am an immunocompromised patient in general sense it means that i am hiv positive, and i always fear that i might get an opportunistic disease such as Tuberculosis because my immune system is getting impaired by the virus weakening my Antibodies. I have been living with the virus for 3 Months now and my CD4 count is still high that at the clinic they refused to put me on Antiretroviral therapy as by law they say i am supposed to start on ARVs when my CD4 count is less than 300 at least....

As i have already introduced myself, My name is Theresa Mendoza but they call me Terry i am 25 years old and working as a cleaner in a very classy and well known 5 star hotel in town called Bangladesh, it is named after the owner's country of birth and very much admired for their Asian cuisine. Being a cleaner is not my kind of job but i have no choice because i am left to take care of my little sister Zerra and my Brother CJ who

is 16 years old. It's just the 3 of us we live in my Mom's house the one she left us when she passed on a few years ago due to poor health, even today we don't know what killed her or what sickness she had. I dropped out of school in grade 10 to take care of my Mother who was grave sick at that time, she couldn't do anything for herself she was extremely sick that she was put on an adult nappy as she couldn't even go to the toilet. It was very disturbing seeing her in the state especially her last days at the hospital she was very sick and skinny bones protruded and her sick was sucked in, i remember at times we would visit her and flies would just be dancing around her that was the most heartbreaking part of her sickness...

My Mother was not born and bred in South Africa, she once told me that we fall under the indigenous ethnic group known as the Basques and that we originate from Spain. Her reason for moving to South Africa was to seek a better life in a country that promised her great opportunities but unfortunately being a foreigner without any educational background won't really earn you CEO status so she became a prostitute. The reason why she left her country of origin is that she was born into a very big family and her Mother who was a single parent worked at least 3 jobs to provide food for them and my Mother as the eldest child she thought that it would be better if she tried to seek employment in another country to help her Struggling

Mother, but things didn't really go according to how she had planned them..

So there she was exchanging her body for Money what kept her motivated was how her Mother and her siblings were struggling she really wanted to be off great help to them but sadly the Spain currency is much stronger than the South African currency and it was hard for her to send them money that was gonna be enough to sustain them, i don't know why she never seeked employment in her own country..

Nevertheless my Mother continued to live here and her prostitution years brought her three children as a reward with different fathers who were her clients no strings attached and all of us we are without Fathers. After she had given birth to my Sister Zerra her health took a tragic turn and she passed on two months later after Zerra was born living me to care for them..

At first we lived off the money she left for us and stayed in the house that she bought for herself or should i say that one of her clients bought for her and when the money was running out, we sold most of her clothes and her expensive car. She was a very successful prostitute, not only was she that but she upgraded to do porn Videos and that made her a lot of money..

After the money ran out i didn't know who to turn too as i have never met my Mother's family and around here we didn't have any relatives i couldn't get a job either because i had no Matric

the only thing left was my Mom's first car but i didn't wanna sell it because it was sentimental. It's a purple Citi golf that she bought when she made her first few bucks and the car is very useful to us because now i get to drive my Siblings to school with it and drive to work with it . it's off great help when i knock off late...

Those were the most darkest days for us, seeing my siblings go to bed with an empty stomach crushed my soul i knew that I had to do anything and everything to give them a better life hence i started sleeping with married men for money, and the last one i slept with infected me that's when i came to realize that i cannot live this way i don't wanna die and leave my siblings all by themselves. I stopped living a promiscuous life 3 Months ago when i found out that i was hiv positive and i looked for me a job and here i am today cleaning after everyone's mess for R3500 a month, not a lot of money but it puts food on the table everyday..

My Boss Bangladesh is the most corrupt civilian in the whole of Civilization, his hotel accommodates tourists, celebrities, socialites, businessmen, it is one of the most high ranked 5 star hotels it was rated 8/10 and he makes a lot of money from it yet he only pays us peanuts because we are peasants to him...

Everyday we see rich people checking in or coming to have dinner, he even has call girls for his rich clients who are looking

to have fun you know be away from their nagging wives for a night or weekend Bangladesh is there misusing those girls then takes 80% of the money that they make.

No one dares to stand up to him because he is dangerous and he knows a lot of dangerous people that he can have you taken out just like that, like you a puff of smoke and have no one miss you...

It's not a good working environment because those men are sexual predators sometimes they can grab your ass or squeeze your boobs you can't say anything but just smile if you smile wide enough you can get a tip for your ass being grabbed..

I just wish that one day things can look up for me, i don't like this job sometimes i work nightshifts and i don't feel comfortable leaving my siblings alone at night the world is cruel..

I got out of bed..

Me: Come ill make you something to eat

I put on my gown and we walked to the kitchen with me still coughing..

I found CJ making himself breakfast he wasn't wearing his school uniform..

Me: Morning

He had his earphones in his ears

Advertisement

can't separate him from that..

I tapped him on his shoulder, he took them off..

Him: good morning, you guys are just in time for breakfast

Me: what are you making?

Him: Cereal

Me: that's not breakfast

Zerra and i sat at the table with me still coughing..

Me: Sorry i made you guys miss school

CJ: it's a holiday today

Me: isn't it tomorrow?

CJ: it's today

I looked at Zerra..

Me: you tricked me!

She laughed..

Me: such a disobedient child!

I put my hand on my chest..

CJ: are you okay?

Me: im fine just my chest is painful when i cough

CJ and Zerra don't know that i am sick and i am not planning on telling them anytime soon, i don't wanna scare them..

CJ: should we go to the clinic?

Me: Pumpkin im fine

CJ: No pumpkin you coughing

CJ gets worried about me i am all they have and seeing our Mother sick everyday whilst she said the words "im fine" then one day we woke up and she was no more it broke us i think CJ has that fear that one day he is going to wake up and hear that i am no more too...

He came and crouched next to me looking at me..

Me: Pumpkin come on..

CJ: please go to the clinic if you can't do it for yourself then do it for me and Zerra

He is a gentleman whoever is dating him is very lucky..

I put my hand on his cheek..

Me: i am so blessed to have you as a brother

He held my hand and kissed it..

Him: you go to the clinic

He stood up and went to Zerra..

He picked her up and put her over his shoulder..

Him: and you pumpkin you going straight to bath

He ran with her to the bathroom while Zerra was laughing her lungs out..

I don't know what i would do without CJ in my life.

CALVIN BARCA

I am Calvin Barca but those who respect me enough address me as Barca, i am a very successful 35 year old bachelor who has the world in his fingertips. I live a life that others only day dream of, and let me tell you nothing gets better than this. But then it was not always like this, i have had the most toughest childhood ever. Both my parents were drug addicts, in my home it was nothing but drugs and fights everyday. My Father's drug empire made him enemy number one in the drug world that other drug dealers were always out to get his life because they were very much intimidated by him. Everyday we lived in fear, everyday we heard gunshots and as a child that can traumatize you for the rest of your life...

To cut the story short when i was 15 and my little brother was 10 our home was invaded and my parents were gunned down right in front of us. My father didn't make it and my Mother was lucky enough to make it but she never had a normal life again she sustained a lot of trauma in her brain and she has forever since been in a home because the outside work was too scary for her..

For me and my Brother to survive we were forced to work for the man that had my parents gunned down, he took us in and raised us as his Sons and we had to be at different clubs or corners every night selling drugs or delivering drugs for him to his high profiled clients...

That went on until i was 20 years old and enough was enough i couldn't do it anymore it was getting harder and harder the drug world was getting dangerous fights every night, bullets flying around and dead bodies on the streets. It was when my Brother got shot at that time that i decided to quit it all, but before i could move on i killed my Godfather, his wife, and his kids then burned the house down..

I was that very mad full of resentment over my Brother's death that i couldn't think clearly even today i still carry that resentment i am a very bitter person....

Yeah i was off the drug world for a while but then i needed a way to survive and dealing with drugs was the only thing i knew

but since that was dangerous i turned things around i have company that deals with a unique opioid drug that i provide independent pharmacies, private clinics, and surgeries with the drug and trust me we have a lot of clients who demand for us to supply them, wanna know why? unbeknownst to all of them we spike the drug with a little bit of Cocaine hence patients get addicted to the drug and demand more; But we smart, in the company we keep the drug clean because the cops like to dance around here in my building but then when we have to deliver we switch the clean drug with the one mixed with cocaine from the warehouse..

I am well respected, very rich, admired, and envied but if only people knew what i was about how i get everyone in the medical profession to eat in the Palm of my hand it would be a different story. Some of the patients have tragically lost their lives because Cocaine is highly addictive so they overdose on the pill, some get involved in car accidents in the long run because of the side effects of the drug. I know that i am supposed to feel bad about everything but i don't, they not my family they mean shit to me so i don't care at all! As long as i make my money and my Daughter is well taken care not about anyone else!

I AM CALVIN BARCA, HEAR MY STORY TOO.

2

THERESA

I went to the clinic to consult with regards to the pains that i was having in my chest when i coughed, it also felt like my throat was on fire. I have tried to lead a healthy life i watch what i eat, i don't drink or smoke and i am currently not in a relationship with anyone so i don't understand how i can fall sick all of a sudden...

The Nurse came back she sat on her chair while i sat opposite her..

I came with Zerra but i left her at the reception area i don't want her knowing about this, i also don't want CJ knowing about this..

Nurse: you are coming down with a terrible cold

Me: that's all the is to it?

Nurse: Yes but then today you going to start with your Antiritroval therapy your CD4 count is no longer that high

Me: ohw

She stood up and went to the cabinet to get the pills..

Her: this ones are going to help you with the side effects especially dizziness

Me: Okay

Her: Please take your medication everyday do not skip even a day

Me: i will

I was upset i was really upset, this is going to be my life through and through i am going to live on pills. I know the situation of "you can still live normally" but that's just bullshit in a bag, who would wanna be in a relationship with me? How am I going to have my own kids? What If Bangladesh finds out and i loose my job? I had a lot of "what if"

Nurse: you know that being hiv positive is not a death sentence right? With the right precautions, healthy lifestyle and taking your treatment you can still live like a normal person. There's nothing that exempts you from the rest of us..

I nodded..

Her: here's some cough syrup for your cough

Me: Thank you

Her: i will see you next week when you come for counseling

Me: Next week it is

.

.

CALVIN

I was in my office having a fresh cup of coffee as usual before i start my day and my assistant knocked..

Her: Sorry to disturb you Sir but you have a visitor

Me: who?

Him: Detective Sway

Show him in please..

Detective Sway doesn't really like me he is always here trying to find something that can help him put me behind bars...

He walked in with another police officer..

Assistant: can i get you anything gentlemen?

Sway: No thank you we not here to stay

Me: I'll call you when i need you

Assistant: Yes Sir

He turned my Daughter's picture on the table and looked at it..

Me: you are obviously becoming a regular here

Him: not by choice

He sat down..

Me: what can i do for you today?

He crossed his legs...

Him: 4 deaths this month and investigations lead us here

Me: i am not following

Him: don't fuck with me Barca!

Me: can you please be more clearer on what you accusing me off

Him: Kathy, young single Mother who was taking medication for Migraines and she happens to have been taking a certain opioid drug too one that your company manufacturers

He tossed her picture across the table..

Me: again what am i being accused off?

Him: 4 deaths do you know what they all have in common?

Me: i am hoping that you would tell me

Him: they were all taking your drug

Me: i do not think that my drug is the problem here

Him: they were overdosing

Me: so how is it my problem? Detective you should be looking at the Doctors who are prescribing the drug to the patients are they following the right protocol? Is good work ethics carried

out accordingly? Are they giving the right dosage to the patients? I am not at fault here

I stood up and went to the shelf..

I took out a file..

Me: this is one of the private clinics that we supply and i have all receipts, contract, and proof of how much pills we supply the clinic with

I put the file on the table...

Me: it's all in there

He took the file and opened it

Advertisement

then he went through every document..

He closed it and smiled while looking down..

Him: i am going to take you down Barca! I would like a sample of the drug so i can have it tested

Me: i think we might need a warrant for that Detective don't we now?

Him: why? Do you have something to hide?

Me: not at all i just want things to be done accordingly

Him: Never mind that i will just ask one of clinics you supply, i am sure they will be willing

Me: Very well

He stood up..

Him: i will see you Barca hopefully soon in a jail cell

Me: i wouldn't give you the satisfaction

He walked out..

Me: Fuck!!

I picked up the phone and called Sterling, Sterling is my hitman he takes out anyone that i tell him too and right now Sway is becoming a serious problem. The drugs that we supply at clinics and other institutions are not clean at all, they have Cocaine if tested i am going down..

Me: Sterling

Him: Barca didn't expect your call

Me: Yeah i have a problem

Him: what problem?

Me: i need you to take out someone for me

Him: who?

Me: Detective Sway

Him: a Detective?

Me: that's what i said

Him: that's going to be a bit difficult

Me: i don't care you fucken get it done!

Him: I'll try

Me: don't try just fucken do it!

Him: Yes Sir!

He hung up..

I opened the drawer and got my stress ball..

My phone rang..

Me: Yes Lettie?

Her: Your Daughter is coming up to your office right now

Me: what?

Her: she is with her Mother

The door opened and Wendy walked in while holding Claire..

Me: what are you guys doing here?

Wendy: i took Claire to the doctor thought we should pass by here first before going home

I don't do relationships at all i don't think i am capable of loving anyone other than my Daughter. Wendy used to work at Bangladesh hotel and she became my call girl, but unfortunately I fucked around and made her Pregnant. Nevertheless she has given me a beautiful daughter Claire she is 5 years old..

I stood up and went to get Claire..

Me: Come sweetheart

She was burning up, she really didn't look good....

Me: what happened?

Her: she has been complaining about stomach cramps since from last night

I went to sit on the couch..

Wendy: i think it's something she ate at school

I looked at her..

Me: Sweetheart how are you feeling?

She couldn't say anything..

Me: i think we have to take her to the hospital

Wendy: the doctor gave us meds she's just drowsy from the Panado that she drank

Me: I wasn't asking you Wendy i was telling you, get my keys
She got my keys and we left..

.
.

THERESA

Zerra and i passed by at the mall first to get a few groceries
before heading back home, i was still disturbed by the fact that
now i am going to be dependant on pills for the rest of my life..

Zerra: are you crying?

I ignored her..

Zerra: Terry are you crying?

Me: what?

Zerra: you have tears in your eyes are you crying?

Me: No pumpkin i am not crying, my eyes are just painful

Zerra: you should go to the Doctor if you sick

Me: i will

I parked next to the gate and we went to get the groceries from
the trunk..

My phone rang...

It was Bangladesh..

Me: Dash

Him: were are you?

Me: i am at home were im supposed to be it's my day off

Him: get to work now

Me: it's my day off

Him: i don't care! Who takes a day off month end? Bitch I have guests coming in and i am short stuffed i need your ass here to clean or kiss your job goodbye

He hung up..

Zerra: who was that?

Me: my boss i have to go to work

Zerra: it's late

Me: i know pumpkin

We made our way in..

CJ was home with his best friend Mpho, Mpho is 20 years old and has a mini crush on me..

At first it used to annoy me but he is very charming and handsome that i am even tempted..

CJ: and they are back

Zerra: we went shopping

I looked at Mpho..

Me: hi

Him: hey

CJ: let me see what you guys bought

He went through the plastics with Zerra, Mpho extended his hand and grabbed my butt i hit it off and looked at him..

Me: Stop (whispering)

He winked at me..

CJ turned and looked at us...

CJ: Mpho is going to stay with us for a few days i hope you don't mind?

Mpho is a DJ and he is trying to get CJ to be one too which i really don't like CJ is still young he should concentrate on school.

3

THERESA

When i do a nightshift i always make sure that i cook for Zerra and CJ before i leave. CJ is very helpful with Zerra when i am not around, bathing her, feeding her, and then putting her to bed. On weekends it gets annoying for him because he wants to go and do this Deejaying thing but he will have to give up that session that could've potentially paid him R600 just to babysit, it's not like we have a choice though i cannot afford to loose my job..

After i was done cooking the only thing left was for me to go take my bag and drive to work, i was on my way to the bedroom when i pumped into Mpho in the passage..

Me: the house is quiet thought no one was around

He folded his arms, leaned against the wall and started undressing me with his eyes. Mpho has this charm and a very cute smile that a girl cannot resist but to fall down on her knees..

Him: CJ and Zerra went out to the shops to get some airtime and snacks think you were bathing

Me: Okay well then if they make it back and i am not around tell CJ i have already cooked for them

Him: them?

Me: for everyone sorry, just not used to us having guests over

He curved his lower lip and then after he chuckled..

Me: Excuse me i have to get to work

I tried walking pass him but he blocked me..

Me: Mpho i really have to go

He held my hands and really came close to me, my heart started racing. He was smelling very good, his cologne intoxicated me..

He leaned over and whispered in my ear...

Him: why you being like this to me?

Mpho is 20 years old, i am flipping 25 years old this is not going to work..

Me: you are my Brother's best friend and i am old way old too for you

He laughed...

Him: it's not like i am looking for something serious we can just fool around

Fooling around got me to where i am today hiv positive, i don't think i wanna fool around anymore especially not with my Brother's best friend..

Me: i am too old to be fooling around

Him: really?

Me: really?

He put his hand under my chin and made me to face him, then he kissed me..

I found myself getting lost in the kiss i haven't been close to a guy for a while now, after that last bastard who infected me i made a promise to myself that i will stay away from anything that has a Penis...

He pushed me against the wall and unbuttoned my shirt to reveal my cleavage it was getting really steamy for me...

He kissed me on my neck with his hand gently squeezing my breasts my womanhood was deceiving me, my hormones kicked in and i felt paralyzed, i felt submissive to him he was really taking the whole of me..

We heard the door opening, i pushed him away and quickly made my way to the bedroom i closed the door and tried to catch my breath. I fixed myself up and went to the mirror to wipe off my messy lipstick and reapplied it...

My bedroom door opened and Zerra walked in..

Zerra: are you preparing to go to work?

I turned and looked at her..

Me: Yes pumpkin but i am already done

Her: when are you going to come back?

Me: it depends if i don't have a lot to do i will come back really late at night

Her: can i go with you to work one day?

Me: Why?

Her: to help you so that you can come back home early

Me: that's really nice sweetie but they only let grown ups to do the work

Her: okay

She went to her bag and took out her colouring book, Zerra enjoys reading or colouring or even cutting out pictures from magazines than playing with dolls...

Me: you going to be a good girl right?

She nodded..

I went and kissed her on her forehead..

Me: see you later, i love you

Her: i love you too

I took and bag and passed Mpho in the lounge he was with CJ playing Xbox..

Me: CJ im off to work

CJ: okay enjoy.. I love you

Me: i love you too just make sure that you dish up for Zerra and...

Mpho was making me nervous because unlike CJ he was looking at me..

CJ: and bath her... got it!

Me: don't let her chill alone for hours you know how she gets when she's alone

CJ: i know that

Me: are you even listening to me?

Mpho took the joystick from him..

CJ: i am listening i heard every word!

Mpho: then why aren't you looking at her when she's talking to you? You being very disrespectful man

CJ: i heard every word!

Me: well bye then

CJ: Bye

Mpho: Bye

I made my way out to my car..

.

.

CALVIN

Things got really bad when we got to the hospital, Claire wasn't responsive anymore she had slipped into a coma. Something was really serious with my baby girl and i know it's not stomach cramps

something way serious than that..

She was taken to the Emergency room to be attended too immediately with each minute passing and no one was coming to tell us anything, i got more worried..

I cannot loose my Daughter, she is the only thing that makes sense in my life right now, the only thing that reminds me of being a human being. I have never loved anyone other than my Daughter and loosing her is going to be very tragic for me..

I took off my jacket and threw it on the chair, then i loosened my tie..

Wendy: why are they taking so long?

Me: tell me something why didn't you call me or take her to the hospital last night when she started complaining that she is sick?

Wendy: she just said she had a tummy ache i didn't think it was something serious

Me: that's your problem, you don't fucken think!

Wendy: you don't have to be mean she is my Daughter too okay? And i am stressed out!

Me: doesn't look that way

Her: what are you trying to say? Calvin i carried Claire for 9 months, i am her Mother and it kills me to know that something might be really wrong with her!

I kept quiet..

Him: you really shouldn't treat people this way it's not right

The Doctor finally came to us..

Wendy: how Is my Daughter holding up doc?

He sat down..

Him: can i just ask about the symptoms that she had? What really happened?

Wendy: it's something that started 3 days ago she had fever, complained about headaches too then yesterday she was getting worse she would cringe and said she had a tummy ache she vomited a few times then today i took her to the Doctor because she was getting very weak

Doc: i believe that your daughter has meningitis

Wendy: Meningitis?

Doc: acute inflammation of the layers that cover and protect the brain. Dura mater, Arachnoid, and Pia mater. It affects the layers of the brain and the spinal cord

Wendy: sounds serious

Me: it is serious

Wendy: how Is it possible that Claire could've gotten such a serious illness?

Doc: it's caused by an infection with bacteria, virus, Parasite and other microorganisms

Wendy: she just said at school they ate vegetables for lunch at the cafeteria

Doc: could be that the vegetables were not properly washed

Me: i am going to sue the school if that's the case!

Doc: we have done a lumba puncture were we extracted a sample of her cerebospinal fluid and sent it to be tested we should have the results in two days time

If it is Meningitis which i strongly believe so then we are going to proceed with the treatment

Me: you do everything that you have to do Doctor to save my Daughter's life

Doc: we will

He stood up..

Wendy: can we see her?

Doc: im afraid not today maybe tomorrow

Me: well thank you for everything

Him: i have to get back to work

He walked away...

I know Meningitis to have killed a lot of people and now hearing that my daughter might be suffering from that just drains me..

Me: this happened 3 days ago and you didn't think that you should call and tell me?

Her: Calvin at first it was not that serious!

Me: i tell you everytime that even if she can sneeze or cough you fucken call me!

Her: i am not an enemy here stop treating me like this is my fault!

Me: it is your fault!

All eyes were on us...

Me: since when does Claire eat at school?

Her: you really upsetting me right now (crying)

Me: you so stupid Wendy!

Her: i packed her a lunch box like i always do everyday! I don't know perhaps she saw her friends getting something from the cafeteria and she did too

I stood up and took my things..

Me: if my daughter dies from this i am going to kill you! You and that retarded school that i am paying soo much money for you will pay for this!!!

I clicked my tongue and walked out...

.

.

THERESA

The only thing i look forward too at work is seeing my best friend Busi, that's the only thing that makes me excited about work. Busi Is also in her 20s we the youngest in the cleaning department that's why we click so well...

Busi: are you ready for another day?

Me: don't even ask

Busi: i thought you were off today

Me: Bangladesh called

Busi: i am sorry friendship

Me: I'll survive

I started coughing..

Her: that's a nasty cough

Me: i went to the clinic for it and i was given ARVs

Busi: your CD4 count allows?

Me: so said the nurse

Busi: she didn't do any tests?

Me: None

Busi: then how did she know?

Me: i don't know Friendship but what i know Is that im tired of that public clinic it's very unprofessional

Bangladesh walked into the room, he was with some pretty girl..

Dash: listen here

We gave him attention..

Dash: this is Charity, every Wednesday, Friday, and Sunday she satisfies one of my best and rich clients Mr Calvin Barca i am sure you know him

Who doesn't know Barca, the richest and handsome bachelor in the whole town, very successful individual...

Dash: Teresa

Me: Theresa

Him: i don't care! Charity will be supervising you on how to prepare their room and make sure you follow her instructions

Me: of course

Charity: if you ready we can go

Me: after you

We walked to their room..

Charity: you have a lot of work to do Barca likes his room a certain way..

Who cares? it's not like he lives here, he is just fucking you for the night and that's it! I hate these calls girls just because they sleeping with rich guys they think they have made it in life...

4

THERESA

Charity was a nightmare if she's hoping to be a Madam' one day and have a maid they won't last, she is a slave driver. In life it's not right to overwork or treat those who help you like slaves just because you pay them, i think helpers/

cleaners all around should be treated with the utmost respect trust me it's not easy to clean up after another person's mess it's not something we would choose to do but circumstances force us too, we have responsibilities so we don't have a choice. Cleaning the bathroom was a nightmare she even made me wipe it with a white towel after cleaning it just to make sure that it was clean, if the towel had any stain she would have me clean it again. I shouldn't be taking any shit from this girl who looks like the same age as me or even younger, but one bad word from her about me to Bangladesh then i am unemployed..

She overworked me that we even went pass my clocking off time, Busi has been calling me none stop because we usually meet at some Diner right around the corner to grab a bite before going home and i was running extremely late Charity didn't even look like she cared..

I was relieved when she said "Now it looks clean" at least now she can release me, my master can let me go..

While i was busy with my last chore which was making sure the bed is fine she walked out to get her outfit for tonight, and before i could leave she has to sign my register so she was torturing me for the last time..

She had been gone for a while that i sat on that small dressing table chair waiting for her while texting Busi that i am coming she has to wait for a couple of minutes..

The door opened, finally she is back!

I stood up while exhaling, but it wasn't Charity. Mr handsome himself made his way in. I see Calvin Barca in the papers or on TV when he is doing an interview seeing him face to face soo close made me nervous, it made my knees to grow weak..

He wasn't in a suit just wearing a black&white golf T, black formal pants, and black sneakers they go well with both formal and casual wear. He had his sunglasses on and his facial hair was perfectly trimmed. He was holding a glass that had ice, lime, and im thinking sprite too or just still water... Bangladesh always tells us that "make sure you are out of the hotel room before the guest makes his/her way in" and right now i was in a very crappy situation i was in the presence of high a profiled person. Barca is very handsome, intimidating, charming i don't know why he doesn't get himself a woman and stop doing call girls it doesn't suit him at all..

He took off his glasses and looked at me, i was literally shaking because i didn't know how to react.

He was starring at me right in the eye and i couldn't read his expression if he was pissed or what he showed not emotion...

The door opened again and Charity walked in, she was taken too at what was happening...

Charity: Ohh my word you are still here?

Me: i.. I was waiting for you and..

Charity: get out!

I took my cleaning gear and quickly made my way out..

Charity: Ohh my goodness i cannot believe this!

I made my way to the changing room and only realized there that i forgot my register in the room and she's not gonna sign it, Bangladesh is going to kill me tomorrow!

Me: ohh Lord i am soo dead!

I was busy repeating those words while busy undressing..

.

.

CALVIN

I was busy walking around the room while Charity was in the bathroom fixing herself, when she's there i know it's going to take forever for her to finish.. As i walked around i noticed a small book on the dressing table and a bandanna..

I took the book and read the name at the front "Therisa Mendoza" i went through it and it was a cleaning register that girl probably forgot them..

When i heard Charity's voice nearing i put them inside the drawer..

Her: okay we can go

She looked beautiful as always

Advertisement

Tight short red dress, red long heels, red lips, was just perfect..

Me: you look beautiful as always

I don't usually do one call girl throughout i get a new call girl every month but Charity it has been 3 months now, there's something that's special about her and believe me it's not "Love". I cannot love anyone other than my Daughter especially not a hoe that i occasionally hook up with....

Me: i got you a gift

Her: what it is? Diamonds again?

Me: no it's a bit bigger than that

Her: then what?

I took the car keys and gave them to her...

Her: You got me a car? (shocked)

Me: you deserve it, i came with it

She lost it and came to me to hug me, after a few seconds she composed herself..

Her: i apologize didn't mean to act crazy

Me: it's fine.. Shall we?

Her: Yes

She put her hand around my arm and we made our way out..

This is what i do most nights, have dinner with Charity then we come back to the hotel room to have sex then after its back to my life and work..

THERESA

Busi was very annoyed and i don't blame her, she has been waiting for me for a very long time..

Her: i am having my third glass of milkshake

Me: i am truly sorry Charity was very impossible

Her: we didn't get to have our few minutes now my boyfriend is coming to fetch me

Busi lives with her boyfriend who is doing his second year in varsity, they have been together since from high school and they are very much in love..they live in a flat and Busi pays most of the bills because he is a student and doesn't get that much from his bursary. They planning that when he finishes then Busi can go to varsity, now they both can't go to school Busi doesn't have funding and he wanna helps her out when he is done..

Mike walked in..

Busi: Hey baby

She looked at me..

Busi: see now we have to go

He kissed her and then he came and hugged me..

Mike: how are you girls doing?

Busi: we just tired

Mike: that's sad because my homie is in town and we going to meet now at the club i wanted you girls to tag along

Busi: do we have too?

Him: Yes he won't be in town for too long, i want you to meet him before he goes back home

Busi: we really tired

Mike: Come on Babe just for an hour i promise

Busi looked at me..

Her: you tagging along

Me: no thank you

Her: you owe me for waiting for you

Me: Busi i have a terrible cough i just wanna go home and sleep

Mike: Come Terry it'll be fun

Me: one hour?

Mike: one hour

I gave Mike my car keys..

Me: then you will be driving

We all walked out from the Diner..

AT THE CLUB

We arrived at the club and it wasn't that full or maybe because it was during the week, but at least it was close by i don't have to drive a long distance to get home..

We were sitting waiting for Mike's Friend and they were busy making out, it was very awkward for me just sitting there opposite them holding a candle..

Busi and Mike have that type of love that i can only envy and dream of, i don't think i can be in a serious relationship were someone would wanna love me with my condition without worrying that one day i might infect them..

Mike: let me go get us some drinks while we waiting

He stood up and went kissing Busi before he went to get the drinks..

Me: yall gotta take it easy some of us are single and we will be for life

Her: don't be like that you gonna find someone someday who is going to love you and both of you are going to have a squad of kids

Me: that's just wishful thinking

Her: don't be too hard on yourself babe

Me: it's reality Busi no one is gonna want to love and marry someone who is hiv positive

Busi: you know what i am going to set you up for a blind date

Me: Please don't

Busi: Yes i will

Me: really don't

Mike came back with a bucket full of red square dumpies, and he got castle lite for himself..

Mike might not know about my status hence he doesn't know that i don't do alcohol..

Busi: Uhmm Love Terry doesn't drink alcohol

Mike: My bad Terry

Me: it's fine ill make an exception for tonight

Busi: are you sure?

Me: It's red square friendship relax

Mike: there he comes

Busi: who?

Mike: My friend

He stood up and i didn't believe who showed up, it was Mpho..

Mike: thank you for making it man thought you got lost

He went and they greeted each other..

Mike: girls meet my homie Mpho and Mpho meet my girlfriend Busi and her friend Theresa but we call her Terry

Busi: hello Mpho it's nice to finally meet you

Mpho: same here and you pretty by the way

Busi: aren't you a charmer?

Mike: watch it she is taken

Mpho: i wouldn't dare

Mpho looked at me..

Him: Theresa ain't it a coincidence?

Me: it is

Busi: you guys know each other?

Mpho: very well, we exchanged spit this afternoon

I took my dumpie and started gulping it down because i know
Busi was coming with 21 questions..

CALVIN

After dinner we made our way back to the hotel room to do the
same thing that we do after dinner and that is having crazy sex..

Charity: dinner was nice

Me: as always

She took off her dress..

Her: and the car is beautiful, must've been expensive

Me: i am not cheap

It was a boring routine i won't lie..

I sat on the bed and she didn't take off her heels. She was wearing a red bra with a matching underwear, she has a sexy body..

She came and sat ontop of me then we started kissing..

Her: condoms?

Me: they here

We continued kissing and i laid back, after a few seconds i turned her and i was ontop of her. We continued kissing and my hand was going all over her body until it made its way to her throat. I tightened my grip..

Her: this is different

I don't know what happened but i do get moments were my demons just get unleashed and i don't become responsible for anything that i will do at that moment and for whatever reason i started strangling Charity. She struggled to breath, she sunk her long nails in my skin trying to put up a struggle but i guess i was too strong for her she stopped moving, i looked into her eyes and they had no life in them she was gone...

5

CALVIN

I have always known that my conscious was not easily awakened that part of me that has emotions died long time ago and only resurrected when my Daughter was born and she has been thus far the only thing that can warm my cold heart, the only thing that reminds me that im still a human being. I was shown great hate when i was growing up, my Parents were more in love with drugs than they were with me and my Brother not even once have we ever heard the words "i love you" but love was shown with us being forced to do drugs and i dropped that habit long time ago, or i think i did but i found myself doing cocaine a few times recently. I also tried therapy but it never worked, i am this cold twisted bastard and i am fucken proud of it! It's like i died too the day that my Brother died. I once killed someone only when i was 17 it was a gang fight some cock sucker and his nameless gang tried to rob me of my drugs but they didn't know that i had steel(gun) with me so i started shooting randomly and got one of them, my Godfather who killed my Father and raised me and my Brother turned me more heartless...

I was in the bathroom having a fix of cocaine while reciting my Godfather's words in my head like a poem "Boys this is the life,

if you wanna get rich one day distribute the power, get the money, kill your conscious, and never get caught"

I looked myself in the mirror while wiping my nose, it's time to think how am i gonna beat this murder case again?

I walked out of the bathroom Charity was still laying on the bed i took my cellphone out and sent Bangladesh a text that he has to come up to my room, it's an emergency..

He wasted no time within 5min he was here, i don't blame him though i bring a lot of money to this hotel and i bring him some of my business associates too as clients so he has no excuse when i call him...

When he learned about what happened he started pacing up and down all nervous, more nervous than I was. To be frank i wasn't nervous or was the coke getting to me?

Dash: what are we going to do i mean...

He took out his handkerchief and started wiping the sweat off his face.

Him: this has never happened in my hotel

Me: just calm down dude and stop walking around you making me dizzy

Him: my business is going to be shut down i cannot afford that.. I have kids.. I have a wife..

Me: just shut the fuck up! Don't i have family? My daughter is Laying in hospital now if i go down for this she is going to die waking up knowing that her Father is in jail

Him: so what are we going to do?

Me: first and foremost, how do cameras work here?

Him: the ones in the corridors are temporary off we supposed to have the maintenance people come tomorrow, the only ones working it's only at the reception

Me: that's fucken good the only footage they have of me with Charity is only at the reception

Him: Yes

Me: so this is the story

I stood up and ran my fingers on my hair while inhaling..

Me: Charity and i got back from the restaurant we came upstairs to our room but we had an argument when i told her that we have to stop our affair, we have seen each other for a long time now we have to move on. She lost it and we had an argument then i walked out to the bar to have a few drinks, when i came back i found her dead on the bed

Dash: we can say she overdosed on drugs or alcohol

Me: don't be stupid! How the fuck are we supposed to stage that? Autopsy will reveal she died of strangulation or asphyxia

Dash: then what do we say? She couldn't have died from natural courses

Me: we had an intruder you will temper with the door handle i don't care whose finger prints you get but we have to get other finger prints apart from ours

Him: how am I going to do that?

Me: fucken think! I cannot think for you!. You wanna save your hotel and going to jail for a long time you have to help too i have already laid down the plan for you

He leaned against the wall and sank down..

Him: I'll think

Me: i am going downstairs to the bar when i come back you should have staged everything and never tell that she was your call girl!

I held Charity's hands and remembered her scratching me..

Me: get me a wet tissue

He did..

I wiped her finger nails throughly then flushed the tissue..

Me: make sure that her finger nails have someone's blood underneath

and the person you gonna get must have fresh scratches on his arms understand?

Dash: why?

Me: you cannot fucken strangle someone to death and not have them fight back by scratching you at least! Get your thinking straight!

Him: Yes you right

Me: should i fucken do this on my own? Should i frame your ass??

Him: No.. I..

Me: No.. I.. What the fuck are you saying?

Him: i can do this

Me: then do it!

I stood up and looked at Charity for the last time, i perked her lips..

Me: Rest in Peace sweets

I wiped her cheek a little and then made my way to the door..

Me: ohw before I forget

Him: Yes?

Me: fuck this up and your family is gone! While you take over im gonna have my boys at your house keeping wifey and your kids company if i get sent to jail kiss your family goodbye

Him: please not my family

Tears formed in his eyes..

Me: then do it right!

Him: Yes Sir

I walked out and took out my phone to call Sterling..

Sterling: i am still finding ways to kill Sway

Me: forget Sway i have work for you

Him: Yes?

Me: go to 40 spenika ave, white Town house shook them a bit and send me the clip

Sterling: who fucked you over now?

Me: just do it

get the boys

Him: Yes Sir

I hunged up and made my way to the room again..

Me: i forgot something

I went to the drawer to get that girl's register book and Bandanna..

Dash was crying while walking around the room all stressed...

Dash: wait what's that?

Me: the girl who was cleaning here forgot it her things

Him: wait i think i have an idea

Me: what?

Him: Theresa never really got along with Charity we can frame her for murder

Me: have you lost your mind?

Him: she is just a cleaner she is useless

I went up to him and punched him across the face hard that he fell, i put the sole of my shoe against his face and pressed hard....

Me: you never call anyone who cleans for you useless you got that?

Him: Yes

I got my shoe of him..

Me: try shit and your family is gone!

I made my way out of the room and went to the cleaners room, i saw her locker but it was locked..

I went and put everything on the table with R100 notes that made R1000 then i went out to the reception, i interacted with the man in charge there for a while just complaining about Charity of how ungrateful she is just to make this very valid.

.

.

THERESA

I won't lie i had a good time with them i went hard on the Alcohol that i got drunk but not too wasted, Busi and Mike trusted Mpho to get me home safe seeing that he didn't have a lot to take in...

It's not everyday that i cut down and let loose, so today i really had a good time i didn't even hold a candle Mpho entertained me. We danced, he gave me a hickey on my neck like i had real fun i won't lie..

We were walking to the parking lot, and i was loosing it..

Me: (Never gonna let you go) the way you love me, touch me tease me back.... Come sing with me!! (screaming)

Him: Come on you making noise

Me: that's because i had fun

We got to my car but we didn't go in..

He took out a cigarette and lit it..

Me: "I, oh I, oh I.. La la la la la la.. So high, so high.. I, oh I, oh I

I'm feeling drunk and high

So high, so high"

I was leaning against the car and he was standing in front of me..

Him: you are drunk

Me: but i had a good time

Him: i bet you did

Me: can i have a smoke too?

Him: No

Me: Why?

Him: you can drink and everything but i don't like girls that smoke

Me: i am not your girl

He dropped the cigarette and stepped on it..

Him: let's go.. Hand me your keys

Me: and your car?

Him: Mike took it I'll get it tomorrow

I took my Keys out and gave him..

He unlocked the doors and we got in..

I put my leg across him..

Him: what are you doing?

Me: i don't know i feel some type of way

He chuckled..

Me: Come on the parking lot is dark and empty

He leaned over and kissed me, i wanted him my sexual hormones were hungry for him..

I got from my seat and went to sit ontop of him..

We continued kissing and he took off my tshirt..

Me: wait, wait, wait..

Him: what? What? What?

Me: condom?

Him: are you for real?

Me: or else we not gonna have sex

Him: Terry..

Me: i am serious

Him: fine i won't come inside of you

Me: No you have to get a condom

Him: i don't walk around carrying condoms

Me: go inside and get a few

He laughed..

Him: you joking right?

Me: then drive me home

Him: a condom matters because?

Me: because!!!!

Him:???

Me: i don't know who you been with, and you certainly don't know who i have been with

He tried kissing me again but i pushed him back..

Him: fine ill get the damn condoms!

Me: good

I got off him and he went out, i waited for him to go get condoms..

6

CALVIN

I carried out the plan exactly as how i had planned it, i went out downstairs to the bar had a couple of drinks and did cocaine too. I had a blast and then later on i made my way back to the hotel room were i hope that Dash did everything accordingly and that he didn't throw me under the bus..

First thing i did when i got to the room i called the paramedics, and then later on the cops came and i was taken down to the police station for questioning. As always, Sway wormed his way in to the opportunity of grilling me with never ending questions busy tossing and turning me like a patty on the grill. I didn't say anything that was out of context, questions i felt like were aimed to sink me down like the titanic ship i restrained from answering them because one wrong answer this bastard will bury me alive. I only answered to what happened when Charity and i got to the bedroom which was us "arguing" and me going out all "mad" to the bar to get away from that unnecessary argument. I have witnesses that i had talked too at the reception and bar complaining about my "hook up" who wanted a strings, attached relationship now and went ballistic when I said i am not ready for a serious relationship..

Sway was ready to call it quits and sail away to the sunset because he couldn't get what he wanted from me all he kept on

threatening me with was "The Forensics team is there turning everything upside down collecting finger prints, DNA" that was a lost cause, obviously my finger prints are going to be ruled out. I have touched more than one item, it's a room i booked for a hook up what was i supposed to do? Wear latex gloves throughout? Now that would raise suspicion it would be premeditated murder should my finger prints not be there.. Time waits for no one, Seconds, minutes, and hours passed by Sway wasn't getting anything from me. Frustration, perspiration, one cigarette after another diagnosed how pressured and slightly pissed off he was. He knows that i cannot take a lie detector test after being questioned for soo long, and not forgetting the fact that i had a couple of drinks. That's not against the law after all i didn't "know" that i would be lowered down here and interrogated for the murder of my hook up, that i left at the hotel room upset with me to get fresh air...

When he couldn't find the best coffin to put me in, he resorted to the next best thing and that was throwing me in the holding cell for the use of an illegal substance(cocaine). That's something my Lawyer won't find difficult to fix, it's not like i am selling the substance i was just having a bit of fun and decided to sniff it..

I was laying on the steel bench facing up with my hands acting and a pillow supporting my head from behind, my left leg was

slightly raised up and i was just focusing on that small window until a familiar voice disturbed me...

Voice: Taking a soul feels like a thrill ride, feels like you have taken down all your enemies!

I got up and sat up straight, the Person walked up to the window...

What was mentally disturbing about the Picture was that the Person looked exactly like me, Flashy suit, hair neatly combed to the back it was my clone the only difference is that his voice was a bit deep and he had blazing red eyes. Were your pupil reflects a black, or brown colour those who are off different race it reflects a different colour green, grey, and blue being the main his were reflecting fire. His tongue was thin but sharp and split like a snake, who is this person?

I looked around for the guard but i couldn't see one..

Him: A snake venom something so typical can have detrimental effects, it's instant, paralyzes your muscles, interferes with your red blood cells, weakens your white blood cells. You crawl feeling every inch of you slowly dying, with the flow of the blood in your system it travels fast before you know it gets to your heart that's were it kills you, it kills your whole being because the heart is attached to your soul, it is your life...

Me: Who are you?

Him: Nc nc nc, the question should be who are you Calvin Barca?

He took out a lighter and lit it up..

Him: By the age of 7 years old, you were sitting down on the kitchen floor crying after your Father had landed his fist on your eye and you had a blue eye. You were very upset, your Hate towards your own Father grew your mind thought of ways on how you could end his life. You were tired of how he was treating you and your Little Brother, you heard a knock and you stood up to go and open..

He turned around and looked at me...

Him: There i stood and i asked to come in, you let me in, you accepted me.

Me: Are you the devil?

He chuckled..

Him: No but you are...

Me: that was a dream i had, i cried myself to sleep on that kitchen floor and i had a dream but when i opened the door it was not you who stood there, it was an Angel. It didn't happen physically it was just a dream!

Him: It was the devil, with Angel wings. It was your evil conscience, you let me in and i overpowered your good

conscience that is why good never exists in you. Your innocence died Calvin that day, the cold and evil resurrected in you and your became the devil

I gave him my attention...

Him: The only thing that has kept you warm and reminds you of your human self is your Daughter

Me: That's true

Him: it has always been like that

Me: Yes

Him: until today

He put out the lighter..

Him: you saved her

Me: saved her?

Him: you didn't stay true to yourself, immediately when you saw her the venom that has poisoned your heart and soul all these years, the venom that darkened your heart had an antidote she became an antidote

Me: Charity? If you talking about Charity she's dead and i never loved her!

Him: Love, such filth! It is "Love" that made God to sacrifice his own Son, his own lamb, his own child to gain more children. It

was Love that brought back human beings again back to God, It was Love that made God to forgive the human race after i had forced them to sin against him. Love is filth, we don't do Love your love for your daughter is pardoned she is one of us she is the seed of the devil!

Me: any point that you making?

Him: You are falling at her mercy, she will turn you she will infect you with "Love"

Me: who?

He walked up to me..

He took off his jacket and his shirt, he had a wound on his rib that he was covering with a guaze, but it was deep to cover up. The depth of the wound cannot be filled up with not even a 100 gauzes...

Him: Revelation 12 verse 7 "then War broke out in heaven.

Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, who fought back with his angels; but the dragon was defeated, and he and his angels were not allowed to stay in heaven any longer. The huge dragon was thrown out, that ancient Serpent, called the Devil, or Satan, that deceived the whole world. He was thrown to earth, and all his angels with him".

I didn't say anything, he got closer and i stood up..

Him: People think that's the worst that happened to me

The more he got closer i felt the coldness, the darkness, the evilness..

Him: you know what's the worst?

Me: what?

Him: it was when he penetrated his hand in my rib and ripped off my righteousness, from that day on i was naked and you will feel the pain i felt

He put his hand and it went in, it penetrated through my heart..

Me: Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!!!!

Him: you will feel how it feels to be me after all we are one

Me: Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhh stop!!!

He ripped my heart off i stepped back with my hand on my chest trying to cover the hole, he was standing there with my heart beating in his hand. I was also bleeding from my mouth too, i stepped back until i was against the wall..

Him: "Bəlkə heç insan olmaq heç vaxt! Filthy canlılar !!! i, əbədi sizin daxili yaşayır biri ola bilər"

(Maybe you never become human ever! Filthy creatures!!! May i, be the one who dwells inside of you forever)

He started laughing what was diabolical was that i was still alive, even with my heart not attached to me

Him: you do not have a heart!!!.....

I opened my eyes and gasped for air, i was laying on my back on the steel bench i must've fallen asleep. I looked at my hand i was shaking a bit, i got up and my heart was painful literally. I sat up straight and my heart was still painful, was a bit of an unbearable pain...

The guard came and stood at the bars..

Him: are you fine?

I slowly nodded..

I looked around and i was alone in the cell..

That was one crazy nightmare..

.

.

THERESA

What i hate about drinking is that you wake up with a terrible hangover the following morning, more like a train has ran you over. I had a headache and my chest was worse today when i coughed, it was breathing out fire. According to me i would sleep the whole day but unfortunately i have responsibilities, i

had to drive the kids to school then come back and clean. Later on i will have to prepare dinner for them then prepare for my nightshift....

When i got back home from dropping the kids off at school, Mpho was at the kitchen making himself breakfast while shirtless and playing music a bit loud..

"am i ever gonna quit, hell naw.. Will i down it a bit, hell naw.. Am i running with this shit, fucken right.. I burn the levels to this bitch, you know you right my nigga"

The song was sang out accompanied by a little bit of dabbing and a whistle...i know how everyone is curious if Mpho and i did the deed last night? Yes we did and i am relieved that we used condoms the next thing I want is to infect and innocent soul. What happened last night may it be the last of it, what if next time we get very wasted and forget to use protection? I don't wanna do to another human being what was done to me..

I closed the door and leaned against it with my eyes closed...

Mpho: that bad?

Me: you have no idea

I opened my eyes and went to throw the keys ontop of the kitchen counter, i also took off my jacket...

I lowered the volume down.

Me: what are you making?

Him: just some French toast, want some?

Me: No thank you

He came up to me and picked me up, then sat me ontop of the kitchen counter. He parted my legs and came in between..

Him: Someone was really wild last night

Me: blame the alcohol

He put his hands on my cheeks and kissed me..

Him: either way i really enjoyed it

Me: Mpho what happened last night..

Him: was just us having fun

Me: was a mistake

He sighed..

Me: you are my Brother's best friend the last thing i want to do is put ideas in your head

Him: i understand

Me: you do?

Him: Yes

Me: Thank goodness we on the same page

Him: We having fun Terry, live a little it's not like we are going to get married if it's about sex let it be sex but just have fun

Me: Mpho No

Him: Yes!

He kissed me again...

Him: don't worry about CJ he doesn't have to know about this because we not exclusive, we just having fun

Me: Just Promise me one thing?

Him: Yeah?

Me: we will always have fun with condoms?

Him: fine i promise

I smiled.. He kissed me again..

Him: maybe we can go and have fun somewhere

Me: i like the sound of that.. If only your toast wasn't burning

Him: shit!!!

He rushed to the stove..

I got down from the counter, and the door opened..

Mrs Bhengu walked in, now Mrs Bhengu is an old woman who lives down the street. Mrs Bhengu is our church mate, or was

rather we used to go to church together with my Mother, my sister and my Brother but ever since Mom died we stopped going to church..

Me: Mrs Bhengu

Mpho looked at me with his eyes contemplating shock..

Mrs Bhengu lived with her husband they were very much in love. They only had one child, a daughter who is currently overseas working leaving Mrs Bhengu alone. Her husband passed on a few years ago, her Daughter up and left that's enough to drive a person insane..

Her: Theresa i thought this was my house, i am lost again
(laughing)

She had a loaf of bread with her..

Me: this is not your house Mrs Bhengu, you are indeed lost again

Her: I am lost Yes but this is my second home

Mrs Bhengu is the closest neighbour to us..

Mpho: I'll go and bath

He walked away..

Me: uhmm would you like some tea?

Her: Yes please

Me: milk?

Her: No thank you, milk is filthy it gives me stomach cramps

Me: sugar?

Her: 5 spoons please

Me: coming right up

Her: where is your Mother?

Me: My Mother passed on remember?

Her: Passed on to where?

Me: she is dead Mrs Bhengu

Her: ohhh my was i at her funeral?

Me: Yes

Her: thank goodness i loved your Mother

Me: i know

I hit up the kettle..

Her: who was that?

Me: my Brother's friend

Her: Your jealous boyfriend is okay with a shirtless boy walking around the house?

Me: Mrs Bhengu i don't have a boyfriend

Her: Yes you do the white guy, i don't like him Theresa he seems like the devil himself

Mrs Bhengu always talks about things that don't make sense..

Her: And Jesus answered them "I saw Satan falling like lighting from heaven" the book of Luke says so

Me: i am sure it does

Her: A snake Is a Snake dear no matter how much you can love it, have it as a pet from since it's small until it gets big no matter how much love you can show it at the end it will bite you, because that's it's nature to bite same as the devil you cannot love nor change the devil. This relationship will never be heavenly blessed, you cannot sleep with the devil child

Me: okay Mrs Bhengu maybe i should walk you home

Her: My husband is waiting, now we eating bread with Jam

I switched off the kettle, Mrs Bhengu doesn't usually come here today she hit me with a surprise just walking in like that..

CALVIN

I was released to go home after my lawyer came to get me out, it was another blow in the face for Sway that he couldn't even send me to the Lion's den with something so simple as using an illegal substance. I do not know what's the deal with Sway, why does he want to get me locked up so bad. I did nothing to him and i don't even know him at a personal level that could've made us enemies, he is just a detective who has always gunned for me and that's what i know him for.

After signing the forms that i had to sign i was given back my personal belongings and I made my way out to were Sterling was waiting for me. As soon as i stepped outside, cameras flashed, Paparazzi was all up in my face flooding me with questions that i didn't want to answer.

"Mr Barca is it true that a hooker was found dead in your hotel room last night?"

A hooker? How did they get the scope so soon, investigations are still going on who could've leaked this?

"Mr Barca did you kill her? did you have anything to do with her murder? "

"is it true that she was a hooker? Are you into hook ups? Such a high profiled person like you having hook ups?"

It was a question after another question and all im fighting for is to get inside the car and have Sterling get me out of there as fast as he can.

Me: drive! Just drive!

He started the car. I put my hand on my left side, just below my breast right next to my rib cage and started massaging that area, it was still painful.

Me: how the hell did the media get the news so fast?

Sterling: i have no idea

Me: just imagine what they going to write on the papers! This is very bad my name is being dragged into the mud and it won't look good for my company man

I hit the dashboard..

Sterling: we will find who is doing this to you boss

I was furious and i am going to sue every newspaper for anything that they going to write about me, especially anything that's going to spell out "deformation of character" i cannot be dealing with this shit right now.....

We arrived at my place after a while and Sterling went about his own business, but before he left i had a bone to pick with him.

Me: how did it go with Sway? I am betting it didn't go well because he is still up in my ass irritating the shit out of me!

He lit a cigarette..

Sterling: it's not that easy boss, before i can eliminate him from the face of the earth i have to tail him first and that is what i have been doing

Me: how is it going?

Him: a bit difficult but i am getting there

Me: i need to see positive results before month end, i don't like people getting up in my business

Him: Yes Sir!

Me: cool i will call you when i need you

Him: ill be on standby

He got back into the car and drove off while i made my way in...

All i want is to take a shower and then go visit my princess, i called Wendy while i made my way into the house and her phone was on voicemail. Hate it when her phone is on voicemail and she knows it..

I went up the stairs and made my way to my bedroom, immediately when i opened the door everything didn't make sense. There was a plate of strawberries with cream on the

bed, a bottle of one of my expensive wines. The bed looked like someone was laying on it

Advertisement

the duvet was not made, one of my cigars was on the floor and a maid uniform was scattered around the room together with the suit that I was wearing yesterday...

Me: what the???

Who could have a romantic moment in my fucken bedroom! I live alone i don't know what the hell is happening.....

I walked up to my bathroom and there i was welcomed by a gruesome site, one of my maids was in the shower naked and had stab wounds all over her body. You could clearly see the stab wounds because the water had washed away most of her blood. Her head was slightly turned, she had a ligature mark around her neck i had no doubt that she was dead. I got out of there and called the paramedics, i also called the Police. Who could've done this? What is happening? Is someone out to set me up for murder? Is it Dash seeking revenge? I had a lot of questions which were going to be answered soon...

.

.

THERESA

I was the first one today to arrive early at work, looks like i have beat Busi and some of the cleaners that are supposed to take the nightshift.

I was in our changing room when i noticed my register on the table accompanied by my bandanna...

I went over to get it and money fell from it, that was very strange. I opened it and checked if Charity signed but it had no signature. How is it possible that she could return my register to me unsigned but with a R1000 tip? She is pretty weird or is this her way of getting back at me for last night? Looks like I have no choice i will have to face Dash before i start my shift to explain why my register wasn't signed. I can't even forge her signature, she has signed my register a few times if i forge then the signatures won't correspond..

Busi: Friendship

I turned around and looked at her..

Me: Friendship

Her: how are you?

Me: i am well thank you and how are you?

Her: i am good

She went to her locker..

Her: where is everyone?

Me: they not running late?

Her: it's unusual for 5 cleaners to run late at the same time

I shrugged my shoulders..

Her: what's bothering you?

Me: Charity didn't sign my register now i am going to have to face Dash

Busi: i don't wish to be you

Me: she brought my register back, unsigned with a 1000 rand to spite me

Busi: that little witch! Who does she think she is?

Me: a call girl that's sleeping with a multimillionaire sexy looking bachelor how can she not feel herself?

Busi: i am sure she gets a lot from Barca

Me: he definitely does treat her like a princess

Busi: shopping sprees in Paris i can imagine snap her fingers and she can get it all

Me: she's lucky

Busi: i wouldn't mind getting my groove on with Mr Barca

Me: Busi..

Busi: not because his rich that's just a bonus but have you seen the guy?

She started shaking..

Her: Shuuuuuuuuuu he makes my Ancestors come alive

I laughed..

Me: you are insane

Someone knocked at the door, i put on my tshirt..

Me: Come in

Jabu, the hotel manager walked in..

Him: Good afternoon ladies

Busi: Hey Jabu

Him: i am just here to let you ladies know that we having a staff meeting at the receptionist

Busi: so?

Jabu: you requested to be present

Me: really?

Jabu: Yes you part of the staff

Busi and i looked at each other..

Busi: that's a first i mean we always excluded in everything because we viewed as "not important"

Me: since when does the cleaning department have to attend meetings?

Him: it's important

He walked out..

Him: 5min and that's all

Me: sounds important

Busi: it is i mean we never get included in anything

Me: do you think Charity complained to Dash?

Busi: and then Dash called out a meeting especially for you to address the issue? child don't make me laugh you not that important!

We both laughed..

Her: that would be the day

Me: well let's go and see what the meeting is about

We locked the door and walked to the reception, Busi put her hand around my arm..

Busi: so honey which restaurant are we going too?

Me: what?

Her: just pretend to be Barca and we going out

Me: you are insane Busi you need your head checked

Her: Whatever with your jealousy

Me: your crush and obsession with Calvin Barca is crazy

Her: call it whatever

Me: that guy never smiles

Her: he is not a clown

I rolled my eyes..

CALVIN

My house was crowded with the cops, people from the morgue, Forensics and not forgetting the media outside. I would really like to know how they get the news so fast, i only stumbled upon this scene about an hour ago and already they here trying to have a piece of me..

Forensics were going around collecting evidence, pictures were being taken of the deceased and as always Sway cornered me with a few questions..

Me: they can't get anyone else? Im getting tired of seeing you now

Him: who is she?

Me: her name is Hope been my maid for the past two years

Him: what happened?

Me: i don't know i just got home from the police station and found her in the shower

Him: i see

Me: you can call the station to confirm that i was there that's my alibi

Him: don't patronize me Barca

My phone rang..

Me: it's my baby mama i have to take it

Him: we are in the middle of a murder investigation and you wanna take a call?

Me: it's important

I walked away and answered..

Me: Why was your phone on voicemail?

Her: we not married and we definitely not dating i cannot always jump when i receive your call

Me: Fuck you! If i call you..

Her: i always have to pick up i know.. Anyway I don't wanna fight with you

Me: what's happening?

Her: i am at the hospital

Me: and?

Her: Claire is awake

Out of everything that went wrong, this is the best news ever..

Me: give her the phone

Wendy: Wanna talk to Daddy?

Claire: Yes

Wendy: ok here baby

There was silence for a couple of seconds..

Claire: Hello Daddy

Me: Princess

Hearing her voice just made everything alright..

Me: how are you?

Her: fine

I could hear that she was struggling to breath..

Me: Daddy is coming okay?

Her: okay?

Me: i love you

Her: i love you too

I hung up my phone and went back to Sway who was talking to another officer...

Me: Sway

The other officer gave us some space....

Him: ain't you the most lucky bastard?

Me: Pardon?

Him: apparently the hotel security guard is the one who broke into your hotel room last night and we have reason to believe that he might've been the one who strangled Charity to death

I folded my arms..

He came closer to me..

Him: i don't know how you did it but you won't always get away with it

Me: looks like i already have

Him: you son of a bitch!

Me: no im just the devil in a flash!

8

THERESA

We all gathered downstairs for the meeting. It was my department, waitresses, and a few call girls. Busi and i we were a bit taken over the fact that we were asked to be a part of the meeting, i mean the cleaning department has always been downgraded we are treated like we don't exist and not part of the team. We should be the ones who are praised, just because we do not open our legs to make money for ourselves and the hotel doesn't mean that we are less important than others. I wish that we can be afforded the same respect as everyone else..

Jabu came forth to speak..

Jabu: thank you to everyone who came

Busi: i wonder what it is about? (whispering)

Me: me too (whispering)

Jabu: Sorry to disturb you guys while you preparing for your shift but the hotel has been struck with great tragedy that we thought you should hear it from the hotel management first to what's going on than hearing it from the media or social networks

This sounds a bit serious..

Him: Last night Charity was found dead in her hotel room

Busi: what?

Everyone was shocked at what we heard, I mean i saw Charity last night..

Jabu: there was an intruder in her room, the door was tampered with

Busi: Tempered with by who?

Jabu: Thomas the security guard his fingerprints were found all over the room and it was also founded that he has sexually assaulted Charity

Me: No ways Thomas?

Thomas is the security guard that has been obsessed with the call girls especially Charity, on several occasions he has asked Charity out and Charity used to laugh it out i just didn't think that his obsession would go this far..

Jabu: from now on we are going to work in pairs, Yes Thomas is in police custody but we still have to make sure that the whole staff is safe.

He turned to us..

Him: especially the cleaning department can you guys try to work in pairs?

We nodded..

Him: Good obviously Busi you will pair with your friend Theresa, you will be handling rooms of our high profiled clients. Two rooms you guys must do tonight before you go home

Me: Yes Sir

Him: you guys can go, you are dismissed

We all went to our respective departments, i cannot believe this i mean i saw Charity last night. This just goes to prove that we are not safe here in this hotel..

.

.

CALVIN

I wasn't going to spend even one night at my house so i called Bangladesh and told him to reserve a room for me, i might not have a heart but human blood is something that screams a lot more than a voice and i don't think i want to be here until the cleaners come and thoroughly clean everything. Though her body was already taken to the morgue but looking at the shower i could still hear her blood screaming. Who might have done this? Who is trying to set me up?

I had already packed a bag now i was dressing up. First thing that i am going to do is to go see my princess then after ill go to the hotel..

I was checking myself in the mirror and i had a red mark were my heart was ripped off that night when i had that terrible nightmare, when i poke that area it was very painful..

I got dressed and took my bag then made my way downstairs when i saw Sway at the lounge smoking one of my cigars and drinking my finest whiskey. I thought everyone had left, he was sitting on the couch with his legs crossed..

Me: don't you have a job to get too?

Him: you know even though you and i don't see eye to eye but this Cigar and whiskey we have something in common

Me: Sway what do you want?

Him: can i tell you a story?

I checked my Rolex watch.

Me: 5min

Him: once upon a time i had a perfect family my Father made sure that his family got everything that we wanted even if it meant doing bad things and breaking the law. Life was perfect until one day Dad brought home two orphans and said they going to be a part of us. Dad taught them how the family

business worked everything was going smoothly until one of the boys tragically passed on from a shootout...

Me: wait is this..

Him: allow me to fucken finish!!!

I sat on the armrest of the couch...

Him: the other brother couldn't cope when his little brother died it's like he died with him too

Advertisement

then you know what?

Me: what?

Him: the boy killed my parents and the burned the whole house but unfortunately one boy survived he suffered 3rd degree burns but he survived and his name is Daniel Sway

My eyes popped out..

Me: Daniel? Danny Sway? You survived? You look fucken different

Him: skin graft

He stood up and went to pour himself whiskey again..

Him: you took everything from me Barca you are ungrateful after everything that my Father did for you and your Brother?

Me: your father killed my father in cold blood, my Mother is at a home she no longer has a normal life

He kept quiet for a while..

When he turned around he took out his gun and pointed it at me..

Him: Last night i had your maid killed just to frame you but obviously you are harder than i anticipated

Me: so you killed Hope?

He walked closer to me with the gun on his right hand and the glass of whiskey on his other hand..

He put the gun on my forehead..

Him: you can be history right now, then i will be left to Father Claire

I stood up..

Him: what you gonna do? I wanna see you do something!

Me: soo much for being a detective

Him: i needed this title to hide off my sins

He lowered the gun..

Him: i have taken over on the family business

Me: good for you

I clapped my hands..

Him: i had your opiod drug tested

Me: and?

Him: it has cocaine

I shrugged my shoulders..

Him: if you don't wanna go down for endangering innocent citizens then you will help me

Me: if you want me to go back to running a drug empire forget!

Him: think about it

He gulped the whiskey down..

Him: I'll be in touch

He walked pass me and pat me on the shoulder..

Him: think about it

He walked away...

.

.

THERESA

Before i could help Busi with anything i went straight to Dash's office to talk to him about Charity dying before signing my

register, Dash Is heartless he wouldn't care about Charity's departure he will still ask why my register was never signed..

He was in his office when i knocked..

Him: Come in

I walked in..

Me: Evening

He was going through some documents laid on his table..

Him: what do you want?

I sat down and he looked at me..

He gave me a weird look..

Me: Sorry

I stood up

Him: what do you want Teresa?

Me: last night i was cleaning Charity's hotel room and she didn't sign my register

When i mentioned Charity's name he reacted somehow.

Him: where is your register?

I gave him and he signed..

That was weird didn't expect him to do that..

Him: done

Me: ummm thank you

I walked fast to the door before he could change his mind..

Him: Teresa

Damn! What now?

I turned and looked at him..

Me: Yes Sir?

Him: please clean room 10A it's reserved for Calvin Barca he is on his way

Me: ohw

Him: get started

Me: uhmm not to sound disrespectful but Jabu said we shouldn't clean individually i am working with Busi and..

Him: Nothing will happen to you

Me: Sir..

Him: Get to it Teresa!

Me: Yes Sir

I left his office and went to room 10A,i texted Mpho and Busi letting them know that if anything happens to me i was in room 10A..

.

.

CALVIN

This thing with Sway really got to me that I couldn't even go to see my Princess, i don't like seeing her when i am upset so instead i drove straight to the hotel. I called Dash a few minutes ago and he had told me that i am going to be occupying room 10A..

I walked into the hotel and at the receptionist i got a key to my room then i headed there..

I put my hand on the door handle and realized that it was unlocked, i even heard someone singing...

I opened and walked in, the same girl who was cleaning my hotel room last night was cleaning my room again tonight. She was busy cleaning that she didn't notice i was in the room..

I cleared my throat, she turned around and looked at me...

Her: i am.. I was assigned a few minutes ago to clean your room, i had no idea that.. I am truly sorry

I threw my bag on the bed..

Me: kind of a coincidence don't you think?

Her: i supposed soo, sorry ill give you your space

Me: not its fine

Her: i don't want to crowd your space Barca is going to kill me

Me: i insist

Her: if you say so then

She went back to cleaning..

I cleared my throat again..

She stopped..

Me: how about we go downstairs and get a drink?

Her: i don't drink

Me: doesn't have to be alcohol

Her: i am not trying to lose my job

Me: you can't lose your job if i asked you

She smiled..

Her: Mr Barca i don't wanna disrespect you but i know were this is going to lead. A drink will lead to me having to be your call girl, i am not that type of girl so i would rather pass

Me: i wasn't asking you

Her: and i am saying no

She just said no to me?

Me: okay maybe you don't know who i am

Her: i do trust me

She gathered her things..

Her: have a good night sir

She walked away and i went up to her, i grabbed her arm...

She looked at her arm then looked at me, for a few seconds we quietly starred in each other's eyes until the excruciating pain in my heart got me..

I lether go and put my hand on that area..

Her: Sir are you okay?

I closed my eyes and nodded..

She dropped everything..

Her: you don't look okay

She put my arm around her shoulders and walked me to the bed.. The pain got worse

Me: just leave me alone

Her: huh?

I got my arm off her shoulders..

Me: Leave!

Her: how do i leave you when you..

I don't know what got to me but i pushed her hard she hit the wall and nd fell..

Me: i said leave!!!!

I heard a familiar voice whispering in my ear, one that i heard in the jail cell..

"Good Calvin, push her away"

Me: just go!!! (shouting)

She quickly stood up and ran out of the room looking very scared..

THERESA

I was very shaken by what Calvin Barca did and that was going as far as putting his hands on me, that was very unacceptable. It doesn't matter how much money he has, doesn't matter that people literally throw themselves at his feet and worship him but bottom line is you do not treat people like that! I hate the fact that the rich have a tendency of mistreating and oppressing the Poor, we are viewed as nothing but roadside dumpster garbage to them. They don't think for a second that we were created by the same God who created them, we do have feelings too, we do feel pain too. We are not rocks but tender and fragile, we collapse and destruct in the hands of Pain..

I was at home now sitting on the couch very much upset at what happened, he used great force to push me and when i fell i hurt my arm a little. He wasn't sorry, he did not show any sign of remorse for what he did. He was cold and didn't care at all that he might've hurt me..

Mpho walked in with a cup of tea.

Him: here you go

Me: thank you

He lifted my legs up a little and sat down, putting them on top of him..

Me: you know he wasn't even sorry about what he did

Him: did he hurt you that bad?

Me: just my arm

Him: i am pissed i won't lie!

Me: just let it go

Him: he has no right putting his hands on you i don't give a fuck who he is!

Me: Mpho

Him: he might not have respect for other people but he should respect the fact that you are a woman, you don't put your hands on a woman

I sighed..

Me: if it was up to me i would've long quit that job, it's no longer doing me good. There's too much abuse, unfairness and discrimination but unfortunately i cannot just quit i have CJ and Zerra to take care off

Him: you will find another job

Me: where? I don't even have grade 12

Him: but you have experience and i am sure your boss can give you a letter of recommendation

Me: who? Bangladesh? That must be a joke or something

Him: Okay i am bit tired of your whining ill go outside and have a smoke while you take a warm bath you need it, it will relax you

He stood up and kissed me on my forehead..

Him: ill be right back

I stood up from the couch and went to my bedroom, i have to start taking my pills i have been procrastinating long enough now. The reason why i turned a blind eye on my meds is because i did a bit of research online and people have been sharing their personal experience with ARVs the first time that they took them. Some said it made them dizzy, weak, vomiting, running tummy, restless, and the list goes on. I don't want something that's going to make me more sick, what if i fail to wake up the following day? I can't skip work that's not an option...

I put the recommended dosage on my hand and made my way to the kitchen, i got me a glass of water and looked at them first for a few seconds. I got emotional my heart shuttered, my eyes were clouded by tears. How did i find myself in this situation? There's people who are promiscuous and still living a

healthy normal life, just one time, one time i had unprotected sex with that married old man and today i am forced to be dependant on pills for the rest of my life. I closed my eyes as tears fell.. Life is not fair!!

Me: i am doing this for CJ and Zerra they need me

I don't wanna bring myself to imagine how my siblings would struggle if anything happens to me, we are all we have...

The door opened i heard Zerra and CJ arguing while they walked in. I quickly drank the pills and wiped my tears...

I turned around and looked at them..

Me: What's going on with you guys?

Zerra: CJ has a girlfriend

Me: What? Really? And i don't know about this?

CJ: she is not my girlfriend just a close friend

He came and kissed me on the cheek..

Zerra: She is your girlfriend

Me: Zerra go brush your teeth pumpkin

Zerra: CJ has a girlfriend.. CJ has a girlfriend.. CJ has a girlfriend
(Singing)

I looked at CJ..

Him: She is not my girlfriend

Me: Really?

Him: Yes she is my friend and Mpho's friend with benefits

Me: Mpho's what?

Him: they outside right now all kissing and what not

It was like a sharp poker was sharved down my throat when i heard that....

Me: When did it all start?

Him: been months now

Me: i just hope that Mpho hasn't slept with her here in our house

He coughed and went to the stove..

CJ: can i dish up for you?

Me: CJ wanna tell me something?

He kept quiet..

Me: CJ!!

Him: just twice or three times in my bedroom

Me: and you never told me?

Him: i didn't think it was a big deal

Me: didn't think it was a... You allow Mpho to sleep with girls in our Mother's house? No he has to go

CJ: Come on Terry..

Me: He has to go right now!!! And i never wanna see him here ever again are we clear?

Him: Yes Mam'

Me: Good!.. And how come you close friends with Mpho's side dish?

Him: she has always been my friend and Mpho approached her

Me: are they only friends with benefits or there's more?

CJ: Mpho told me that he has no feelings whatsoever but just wants to get in her pants that's all

Me: that's disgusting CJ

CJ: why do you care?

Me: i am a woman! And women should never be disrespected like that

Advertisement

we not just sperm dishes

CJ: language i am still 15

Me: then start befriending people your age! I hope you not letting Mpho influence you

Him: never

Me: i hope so.. Im coming dish up for everyone

I went to the bathroom to check up on Zerra....

.

.

CALVIN

I did a bit of cocaine before going to bed my thinking was still stuck on what happened earlier on, pushing that poor girl like that was uncalled for. I usually don't care about what i do to other people even if i hurt them very bad nothing In me moves me to the point of feeling guilty for my actions, i just don't care. I have never even cared about my own Mother who is and has been stuck at a home for all these years, as the only surviving family that she has i have been contacted a few times on her behalf she has been requesting to see me but i cut her long time ago i don't want nothing to do with her, i don't think that ill wake up one day and want anything to do with her. She Loved and chose drugs over me and my Brother when were young now she wanna act all loving and be a mother to me its flipping too late for that. I will never forgive her or fix things with her, she's dead to me and buried....

I splashed water on my face then ran my hand across to wipe it off..

Me: get a grip Calvin! You have never been sorry about anything

I heard a voice speaking behind me..

Voice: Regret and Remorse should never exist to you

I turned around and it was him, the devil in me that shows himself physically at times by taking a human form that looks exactly like me..

Everytime when he appears he doesn't bring himself to stand in the light, he always finds a dark spot to stand under but his whole appearance to me remains bright as daylight. No amount of darkness hides off how he looks like from me...

Me: Why you never stand where there's light?

Him: we don't bring light we bring darkness

I took the towel and wiped my face dry...

Me: What happened tonight? I saw her again and I had different feelings than the ones I usually have

Him: i never created you but i made you who you are today, though cold and heartless but you were created as a human

being and you will have that human part stuck with you that i cannot take away from you but i have tried to suppress it

Me: meaning?

Him: she brings the human side of you, the feelings that she brings about fights off what we have built all these years

Me: i have never been capable of loving a woman before

Him: love? You going far now

Me: am i always going to experience that excruciating pain in my heart whenever i see her?

Him: why does she bring different feelings?

I walked out of the bathroom to the other room, he was already there standing in a dark spot by the door..

Me: She's not like them women i been with she's different

Him: i thought you enjoyed being dominant, having power, having women worshipping you and being submissive to you

Me: i do or i did

I sat down on the bed...

Me: i don't know what to think it's confusing

Him: do you wanna love anyone else other than your Princess?

Me: Love is filth ain't that what you always say?

Him: you can only have feelings of affection for her, obsession, and Lust. You don't have a heart to love someone else other than your Daughter

Me: if it's like that then why do i experience pain everytime when i see her? Why do i have different feelings?

Him: that's because you confusing those feelings with "Love" you feeling something that you have never felt before and you convinced it's love hence your evil side is fighting it off as i have said before she can be an antidote to you love is very powerful but love should never exist in you

Me: how do i stop that from happening?

Him: don't mistaken affection, Lust, and obsession with Love and you should be fine don't allow her heart to infect you don't give in to her Personality that moves you, her beauty and her shy smile

As he was talking like that about her i felt a bit of a warm feeling in my heart..

Him: if you do not wanna lose it all have fun with her but never allow her heart to stain you do not let her be an antidote to the evil that exists in you. Do not allow yourself to lose what you have worked hard for all these years over "Love" Remember Calvin you are the devil, you are incapable of loving.

He disappeared after saying that..

How can I be feeling love for her when i don't know how it feels like to love a woman? I have only seen her on two occasions at least why am I feeling something so strong and so different than what I have felt for Wendy and Charity. Was it how she stood up to me that made me attracted to her? Was it how she said no? Was it her courage? I laid back on the bed still thinking about what happened no woman or no one has ever stood up to me like she did....

.

.

THERESA

Last night i really wanted to give Mpho a piece of my mind but he came home late when i have cried myself to sleep, i thought i would catch him this morning but i overslept all i found was a note from him saying:

"i took the kids to school for you, they were running late and you were fast asleep"

Me: Aghhhhhhhhhhhhh

I squashed the piece of paper and threw it away. Apart from my broken heart i wasn't feeling very well, i was a bit dizzy and very drowsy..

I was a bit drained too and weak, i sat on the floor in my bedroom trying to gather my thoughts and make out what's happening will i be able to carry the treatment through till the end??? Do i physically have those after effects or its just paranoia and fear that i carried from reading what people shared about the treatment? Maybe my mind is just playing too much tricks on me...

My phone beeped i stood up and went to check, it was a message from Dash which read:

"i need you to come at least 2 hours earlier i need to have a serious word with you. Mr Calvin Barca had a word with me this morning about you, i have to talk to you before you start your shift it's very important"

Me: here we go

I threw my phone on the bed..

If Barca said anything to Dash about me that can put me in a position were i will be fired, then Dash can go ahead and fire me i am tired of sucking ass at that place...

10

CALVIN

"I found myself in a very dark and cold cave the only light that was partially provided for our eye sight came from a burning fiarce that was across the cave, not very far from were i was standing. I was wearing nothing but my black formal pants, i was also without shoes. Small nasty looking creatures were jumping around making irritating sounds, facially when you looked at them they had all the features of a human but their legs and feet looked deformed. When i say facially they resemble human beings that don't make them perfect their looks cannot come as close as looking good like that of a normal human being, somehow they looked like a product of gene mutation if i can put it that way. They were jumping around making noise all chanting, I looked around and noticed someone standing on a rock and facing the wall. What the person was looking at wasn't visible to me or to anyone other than himself..

I slowly walked up to the strange person, the ground was a bit warm despite the coldness of the cave..

Me: Hello?

The person stood still not reacting to my greeting.

Me: Ahem..

Still no movement whatsoever..

Me: i would like to know what's going on?

The person slowly turned and he was no stranger to me. He usually pops up anytime in the hotel room or my place i wonder why now we had to change our place of meeting..

Him: i have been waiting

Me: what am i doing here?

He got off the rock and made his way to me, his eyes still were burning and his tongue was still the same. Split in the middle like that of a snake and protruding between his lips..

Him: you choosing love over riches?

Me: we have been through this haven't we?

He came closer and started sniffing me..

Him: Power, Respect, Riches is what you sold your soul for remember?

Me: i remember

Him: you are prepared to lose it all just for her?

He went and stood next to a dam that had black water..

Him: this is what you are willing to give up everything for?

I walked over to him and looked at the water..

The water started boiling, steam came out..

Him: Get in

Me: what?

Him: you need cleansing, you need to be rid of the feelings that you have for her. You need to be rid of "Love"

I looked at him..

Him: get in

I slowly made my way in, the water was very warm and a bit heavy. It was difficult for me to go any further i was running out of strength and getting tired..

Him: She is making you weak! all the "Love" you think you have for her is wearing you off!

I don't know what was happening to me i have never felt this way before for a woman that i even hardly know..

Him: It is Love that you seek?

Me: i just feel differently for her i do want her, i wanna be with her

Him: Very well

Me: are you giving me what i want?

Him: i took your heart out

Me: i remember that too

I looked at that area where my heart was ripped off..

Him: may you now have the qualities and the heart of the a snake

He took off his black robe..

Him: i give you me, Lucifer the serpent to fight what you think is the love you have for this woman

He made his way to me..

Him: from today we will be one, i will reside inside of you. If her Love fails to be an antidote to you from my Venom, my Poison! i am taking you down to hell! In you two nations will live battling for the consumption of your soul we will battle day and night her love will battle with the devil that lives inside of you!

He got more closer..

Him: we are are one from now on!

He hugged me and I felt him slowly creeping his way into my body, possessing my spirit, my heart, and my soul. When our souls collided the impact was so great that i fell backwards and for a few seconds the water closed in on me with a voice saying:

"Will love be able to save you? Can love defeat the devil in you, Will i win?".....

I came back to the world of the living when i heard a car hooting at me from behind, i looked around and the robot was green. Fuck! I have been daydreaming, no i have been thinking about the dream that i had last night when the robot was still red. My dream from last night should be the final straw to this battle between Love and evil because i woke up this morning a complete different person.

It felt like the old Calvin but was gone is he though? Or is he just silently sleeping in my subconscious mind?

My pupils were different too, they were too black that I had to get eye contacts to balance the colour and make them appear grey so no one can be freaked out. They weren't scary but they were very different from that of a normal person, the red mark was gone from were my heart was ripped it had been replaced with what looked like a tattoo of a red and a black heart locked together underneath the tattoo it was initialed "Love" in red and "Evil" in black..

My eye sight was a bit poor when i woke up earlier in the morning, i saw things differently than before now i literally have to depend on my senses more than my eye sight...

I drove pass the robot and pulled over since the jerk behind me was still hooting, cussing, and irritating me...

I got out of my car and buttoned my jacket then walked up to him..

I knocked on the window he was parked s distance from me and had rolled the window up all silent now. He rolled the window down a little when i stood next to it...

Him: Yes?

Me: All the way down

He did..

I looked at him straight in the eye and i could sense the fear that his eyes portrayed..

Him: Hey Barca i didn't know it was you Sir

Me: let me communicate something that's going to be very clear and known to you

Him: Yes Sir

I looked around and made sure that no car was coming our way, and that all drivers were minding their own..

I got closer the perspiration running down from his side of the face down to his neck was a sign of fear and defeat

Advertisement

something that i pry on..

I bit him on the side of his neck the venom was quickly transferred to his veins, it interrupted the circulation of blood in his body, his veins were green then later on turned black..

I let him go and made my way back to the car when i was certain that the venom had closed in on his heart..

I put on my shades, put a bit of music and drove straight to the hospital to see my Princess..

.

.

THERESA

2 hours before my shift i showed up at work just as Dash requested, he made me wait for another 30min said he was in a meeting..

I paced up and down in his office nervously i know when i left home i was fueled up that if he fires me i will give him a piece of my mind and then walk out, but now i was getting cold feet. I only have grade 10, the only jobs that i am going to get from hereon will be cleaning jobs and nothing major. I have big dreams, i wanted to be a social worker help save kids who are living in abusive environments my heart is big on that..

Me: "God please let me not lose my job, this is all i have. Think of my siblings what am i going to do if I lose my job? How are we going to survive?"

Dash walked in and closed the door..

He looked at me..

Him: Please sit down Miss Mendoza

Sit down Miss Mendoza? Am i hearing that right?

I went and sat down..

He took his seat too...

Him: how are you?

Me: good

Him: ill get straight to the point. You are one of the best Employees that i have, in the cleaning department of course

Me: ummm okay

I felt a lump in my throat as i swallowed..

Him: i have had only i think three complaints about you ever since you started working here in my Hotel

I nodded..

He opened the drawer and took out my register, Shit! I forgot it again in Barca's hotel room when we had that incident..

My heart sank down to my knees, i felt hot flushes it was getting pretty hot in here..

Him: This was submitted to me this morning by Mr Barca

I didn't say anything i was frozen on that chair..

He looked at me and kept quiet for a second..

Him: wanna get that?

I was a bit puzzled..

Him: Your phone it's ringing

Me: Ohw yes i.. I am.. Im sorry

I took it out and it was Mpho, i had been ignoring his calls and messages..

I switched it off..

Me: Sorry

Him: Open it

He handed me the Register.. With my hands shaking i opened it and went to the page were i was supposed to get a signature from Barca and i couldn't believe my eyes. He had signed it and also jotted down a few comments on the comment section:

"I vouch for her she is a terrific and hard working young woman. Every room that has been blessed by her humble

presence leaves me wanting for more, she has a touch of an Angel that turns dark when angered but i am very impressed with the dedication that she shows"

Me: Wow

Him: He has never said anything good about anyone not even his closest call girl that he admired Charity.. I don't know what you possessed him with but keep it

Me: I.. I am in awe really i did not expect this

Him: not all is good news

Me: Huh?

Him: he has requested that I should let you go

Me: Why?

Him: so that you can be his personal maid at his house

My eyes popped out..

Him: his maid tragically passed on now he is desperate and asked to have you. The job comes with benefits a good salary 3× what you earning here, medical aid and everything else

Me: Wow im gonna need a minute this is too much for me

Him: it's sad to let you go but...

Me: Can i think about it?

Him: what's there to think about? Any cleaning colleague of yours would jump at this opportunity

Me: i know it's just that...

Him: Just what?

Me: it's a lot to think about

Him: i give you a day

Me: thank you

I stood up..

Him: you can start with his room superwoman he wants it spotless

Me: Yes Sir

I walked out of there still surprised and speechless, i got to the changing room and sat down for a while trying to process what Dash told me...

I noticed a note on the table with two roses, one was black and one was red...

I stood up and went to see what was going on and the note read:

"Pick one - Theresa"

Okay that was strange..

I took the black one and threw it in the bin then took the red one and started smelling it, i made my way to open my locker and i placed it in there..

CALVIN

I signed at the receptionist then i made my way to her ward, i am sure she is mad at me. Claire and i we are very close the first thing she might have asked when she woke up was "where is Daddy"

I saw Wendy just walking up and down the corridor while drinking water..

Me: Hey

She looked at me..

Her: Hey

Me: Is everything alright?

Her: Yes everything is..

She didn't look alright, she was nervous..

Me: What's wrong?

She looked at me for a while..

Her: Wow you look different in a good way

Me: thank you i guess

I tried walking to Claire's room but she blocked me..

Me: Wendy what's wrong?

Her: Please don't get mad

Me: Why would i get mad?

Her: My..

Me:??

Her: My Mother is.. She's with Claire

Me: What??? Your crazy Mother is with my Daughter?

Her: Barca listen

Me: get the fuck out of my way!!!

I pushed her and she fell i then made my way Claire's ward. I stepped my foot in but i couldn't go any further when i saw a warrior Angel litting up fire across the room with its sword, i stepped back..

My Princess was laying on the bed with her grandmother Mrs Bhengu reading the Bible. I have always resented Wendy's Mother with all my heart, People see her as being mental unstable but she's not. She is a powerful praying woman, her faith can move a mountain i have never seen such a woman having soo much faith in God that most of the world has denied his existence, the same God that science tries to explain away

his existence with logic, and that is what has driven most people away from growing spiritually. Mrs Bhengu spends most of her time praying that she gets filled with the Holy Spirit and starts having visions. That has outcasted her in her own Community, they think she is crazy because of the things she sees and says..

When Wendy was pregnant i had to keep them away from each other, hence i came up with the story of Wendy moving overseas hoping that Mrs Bhengu will die from grieving over her husband and her only daughter but instead she found more strength and comfort from the man above, were i thought she would completely break from losing two people that meant the world to her only brought her closer and closer to God..

Claire saw me..

Claire: Daddy!!!!

Me: Hey Princess

Claire: Look Daddy it's Grandma we reading the Bible

Me: i can see that sweetheart

Mrs Bhengu: Calvin

Me: Mrs Bhengu

Her: It's good to see you Son

Me: I can't say the same

Claire: Daddy come Grandma says God sent his Angels to always watch over me

Me: Is that so?

Mrs Bhengu: Yes such an innocent soul always has to be heavenly protected

Claire: Come in Daddy

Me: Daddy wants to come in Baby but he can't

Claire: Why not?

Me: i just can't Claire

She frowned and that made me very Angry..

She is my Daughter and i need to see her whenever i want too..

I forced my way in and that was the biggest mistake ever, the warrior Angel lifted its sword and the fire that was expelled from that sword sent me flying out of the room, i hit the wall and fell frightening the hospital staff and visitors...

My jacket had literally caught fire i took it off...

Claire: Daddy!!!! (screaming)

Me: Claire!!!

I wanna get to her but i can't.

11

CALVIN

I was frustrated and angry over the fact that i couldn't get into my Daughter's ward to see her, she's my everything she's my whole world and not being able to hug her or hold her hand angered me more deep inside. I don't know what Wendy was thinking bringing her Mother to see my daughter, after she knows very well that i do not want anything to do with her Mother. She has went beyond disrespecting me...

The fire didn't only get my jacket but it got a bit of my arm too it was an excruciating pain that i was immediately taken to another ward so that the Nurse can put a dressing on it...

They were still trying to find a logical explanation one that will explain my being struck by something and just flying across the room to collide with the wall, we talking about Doctors here people who have given in to science for 6 years how do you explain what happened without sounding completely insane? The only explanation i could come up with was to make Wendy's Mother look bad, it was far fetched to call her a witch but that's the only thing i could defend myself with..

Nurse: we are almost done Mr Barca

The Doctor walked in..

Dr: Mr Barca

Me: Doc

Him: How are you feeling?

Me: Just a stinging sensation but i should be fine

Him: you will be at least you weren't burnt that bad

Me: thankfully

Him: I still cannot believe that your Mother in law supposedly burnt you

Me: i don't believe it either but you know what they say about old people and witchcraft she has been crazy

Dr: but still it sounds far fetched

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: then i don't know what else to tell you

Nurse: all done

Me: thank you

Dr: ill give you something for pain too

Me: and one more thing Doc

Dr: im listening

Me: i don't want Wendy or her Mother near my Daughter ever again

Dr: understandable ill just have you sign the form.. But isn't Wendy Claire's mother?

Me: she is but she allowed her crazy Mother to be in the presence of my Daughter knowing very well that she is a witch, what if it was my Daughter who got burnt?

He nodded..

Him: Maybe you should fight for full custody of your Daughter obviously she's no longer safe

Me: would you write a report for me?

Him: absolutely

Me: that would help a lot

Him: ill do that first thing tomorrow

Me: ill get it when i come to check up on Claire

Dr: no problem

He looked at the Nurse..

Him: Please follow me so that you can get some pain killers for Mr Barca

Me: ill be in my Daughter's ward

Nurse: Yes Sir

They walked out and Wendy walked in..

Her: Hey

I looked at her and then looked at my arm..

She walked closer...

Her: Calvin i am truly sorry

Me: you know how your Mother is yet you bring her here putting my Daughter's life in danger!

Tears streamed down her cheeks..

Her: I thought she was better

Me: thought she was.. How many crazy people get better?

Her: she is not crazy she just suffered a mental breakdown when my Dad passed on

Me: i don't care! What you did today showed me how much of an irresponsible Mother that you are!

Her: that's not fair I am a good Mother and you know it

Me: excuse me i have to go and see my Daughter

Her: Calvin Please

I got down from the bed and made my way to Claire's ward, i didn't see the Angel anymore but she was still very much protected...

I stood at the door and took out a black bracelet that had her name engraved on it from my pocket..

The bracelet has dark powers when the dark side learned that I was going to have a baby the bracelet was designed for her i just didn't give it to her, i am giving it to her today since it seems like the perfect moment. The bracelet will attract dark powers and when it does i will be able to see her anytime as long as she keeps it on her arm..

Me: Princess

She looked at me...

Her: Daddy

Me: how are you? did Grandma hurt you?

Her: No

Me: Okay i want you to do something for Daddy okay?

Her: Okay

I tossed the bracelet but it didn't fall on the bed, it fell on the floor not that far from the bed though..

Me: i want you to get off the bed then pick the bracelet up and put it on your hand right?

Her: but the Doctor said i shouldn't get off the bed

Me: do it for Daddy Princess

Her: Okay

She got down..

Me: don't take off the IV from your hand just wheel it okay?

She dragged it with her to go and pick up the bracelet. After picking it up she put it on her hand and it was safe for me to walk in and go up to her, the first thing i did was to pick her up and hug her...

Me: i have missed you

Her: i have missed you too Daddy

I put her back in bed...

Me: i want you to do Daddy a favour okay?

Her: Okay

Me: never take this bracelet off it is meant to protect you from any Danger

Her: Grandma said Angels from heaven will protect me

Me: you can't listen to grandma my Angel

Her: Why?

Me: because grandma is sick in her head and she doesn't talk anything that makes sense

Her: there's no Angels from heaven?

Me: there are Angels from heaven but they are not our family.
Our family is Angels from the dark world

Her: dark world?

I don't wanna go deep with her regarding this..

Me: Just know that as long as you wearing this Angels from the dark world are always going to be here to protect you okay?

Her: Okay

Me: go on get some sleep

Her: is Daddy going to be here when i wake up?

Me: i hope so baby

She closed her eyes...

The bracelet started to sparkle and before i knew it an Angel from the dark world appeared. It's not that much different from normal Angels, just that the one from the dark world has black wings and carries a black sword..

I looked at it..

Me: onun qoruyun (protect her)

It nodded..

.

.

THERESA

I tried my very best to avoid Busi she didn't know what room i will be cleaning today so i made sure that i finish early and be out of sight..

It's going to break her heart when i tell her that i was offered a job to be Calvin's personal maid, i mean we are all that we have in this hotel and knowing that im going to go away and no longer be part of the team is truly going to break her and put a strain on our friendship. I know that she is going to be very happy for me but another part of her will be broken, very broken for that matter..

I decided that I am going to have to hear this from Calvin Barca himself, i want him to be the one to ask me to come work for him and also apologize for the incident that we had the other night. I didn't leave the hotel just yet but instead i went to wait for him downstairs..

I was in the security room with France, unlike Thomas France is old and has been a loyal and dedicated security guard. I trust him with my life, he has protected us and has never given us any reason as to not trust him..

Me: Wow this is a great view of the receptionist, the parking lot and dinning area

Him: i see it all on those monitors

Me: it's very fascinating

Him: coffee?

Me: No thank you just waiting for someone

Him: who?

Me: No one important

Him: ill just make myself

Me: do you have that stew that your wife cooks?

Him: it's not Thursday today

Me: i forgot it's only on Thursdays

He came and sat next to me..

Me: you now working nightshift alone here?

Him: Yes since Thomas messed up

Me: i still can't believe he did that

Him: we are all surprised, i know Thomas has always had a thing for those girls but murder?

Me: i guess that you think you know a person but tomorrow you wake up and they completely different

Him: that's true child

Me: im glad that we still have you

Him: i have 4 mouths to feed i would never compromise my job for anything

Me: I know what you mean

I saw Barca making his way to the reception..

France: and here they come

He wasn't alone, he was with another gentleman..

Me: how many are they?

Him: 5 a night

Me: they all leave their poor wives to come here and cheat on them with young beautiful girls?

Him: rich people can do anything that they want money runs the world

Me: i also wish to be rich one day

France: wish for stability and peace,you can have all the money in the world and it can turn you evil if you don't know how to use it

Me: that is why i like to mingle with old people you guys are very wise

Him: we try to help at all times

I think i have given Barca enough time to go up to his room..

Me: Well France let me go

Advertisement

have to get home to the kids

Him: weren't you waiting for someone?

Me: the person is taking long

Him: drive safely

Me: i will

I stood up and walked out, i made my way to Barca's room..

I took a few deep breaths before knocking, this might go well or ugly i am taking a huge risk here...

I knocked and i didn't get a response.. I knocked again..

Him: Come in

I took a deep breath and made my way in..

He was standing at the small table, he had his back against the door. I think he was pouring himself something to drink..

I closed the door and waited for him to turn around, he finally did and i could see that he wasn't expecting me..

He was wearing black pants, an unbuttoned black shirt and black socks..

I have seen Calvin Barca a few times but today he looked slightly different not in a bad way, he looked more sexy, more charming, very handsome, and his eyes are capable of stealing your heart then melt it..

He put his one hand in his pocket, and another hand was holding a glass of water..

Him: forgot something?

I was taken by his charm, sexual seductive appearance, his partially exposed abs.

His lips were moving but i heard nothing all that was playing in my head was:

"Jump in the Cadillac, girl, let's put some miles on it.. Anything you want, just to put a smile on it

You deserve it baby, you deserve it all, And I'm gonna give it to you

Gold jewelry shining so bright

Strawberry champagne on ice..."

I didn't even see him making his way to me i only felt his hand gently squeezing my arm, i looked at him..

Him: what is it? Where are you?

I looked at him and i was lost in his toxic yet cute eyes...

Me: im... I think that i should.. Im really sorry.. I don't know wh.. I..

I was attempting to leave but he still was holding my arm....

Him: which rose did you pick?

Me: the red one

He got very close and leaned over, i closed my eyes as i could sense his lips nearing to mine.. He released his warm breath that hit my lips.

Him: Close the door on your way out (whispering)

He let go of my arm and walked up to the bathroom.. Just like that? He gonna do me like that?

12

THERESA

I was at home sitting in the lounge and watching TV with my Brother, Zerra was already sleeping. I wasn't even concentrating on what was playing my mind was in a world of it's own, i couldn't stop thinking about Calvin Barca and i don't know why. I was thinking about the little moment that we had in the hotel room, how close he was to me. I could smell him, i felt his gentle touch on my arm, his warm breath hitting against my lips. What is a girl got to do? I have never been this infatuated with a guy before especially someone like Calvin Barca who is way out of my league.

CJ: look at this

He shook me a little..

Me: look at what?

Him: the news

Me: what are they saying?

Him: Some car was found abandoned next to some road, drivers drove pass it at first until one driver stopped to check what was going on and the driver of an abandoned car was found dead

Me: dead just like that?

CJ: Yes he had turned all black it is believed that he might have been bitten by a snake

Me: that's very unusual

CJ: Tell me about it

Me: CJ..

Him: Yes?

Me: can i talk to you about something?

Him: sounds serious

Me: it is a bit serious

Him: Okay?

Me: i have been offered a job

Him: where?

Me: do you know Calvin Barca?

Him: he is a multimillionaire everyone knows him

Me: he asked me to be his personal maid

He looked at me and then laughed..

Me: what's funny?

Him: Barca asked you to be his...Get out of here playing like that

Me: but i am not playing

Him: Pumpkin you want me to believe that Barca personally came to you and asked you for a job?

Me: well it didn't happen like that

Him: i am confused

Me: should i take the job or not?

Him: should you? Of course you should you will be working for Barca i am sure the job comes with a lot of benefits, that guy looks like he can pay you R5000 just by picking up a paper in his driveway

I put my fingers on my lower lip..

Me: you think so?

Him: You will be rid of your evil boss

I sighed..

Me: i am so confused

Him: what's confusing? This could be a great opportunity for us

I laid my head back on the couch and closed my eyes just picturing him standing there with an unbuttoned shirt, his sexy eyes, pinkish to brown lips. The way his lips moved when he spoke, will i be able to resist all of that when i am working for

him? What's with the sudden crush and infatuation with Calvin?

I heard the kitchen door close interrupting my deep thinking...

Mpho made his way into the lounge, i cannot believe that he is still here.. Mpho: Good evening

CJ greeted him back..

He put his keys ontop of the small table in the middle of the lounge..

I am not planning on having an argument with him in CJ's presence..

I stood up.

Me: i am going to bed

Advertisement

goodnight Pumpkin

CJ: night pumpkin

I went to get a glass of water from the kitchen, then went to the bedroom and drank my pills..

I took off my gown and got in next to Zerra who was fast asleep,i closed my eyes and my phone beeped..

I checked and it was a message from Mpho..

"we need to talk you cannot ignore me forever Theresa"

I switched off my phone and closed my eyes..

.

.

CALVIN

I have missed work a lot that the following morning i woke up and prepared myself then went to work, i even showed up earlier than my assistant.

I kept myself busy with going through the files of all my clients checking if we still have a relationship with them or we will have to renew their contracts again..

Sterling knocked on an already opened door..

Me: Come in

He walked in.

He gave me a weird look..

Me: what?

Him: i don't know man you just look different, your eye colour

Me: so i have been told

He sat down..

Him: how is everything going?

Me: things are going well

Him: that's good man

I looked at the time..

Me: Why are you here so early?

Him: i wanted to give you a report on Sway

I laid back on the chair with a pen in my hand..

Me: Yeah?

Him: that man is impossible to get close too he is always alert

I threw the pen on my desk..

Me: you just going to have to find a way

Him: im trying man just give me time

Me: matter of fact lay off on Sway for a minute or two

Him: new task?

Me: Yes something like that

Him: im all ears

Me: i want you to find information for me

Him: what type of information?

Me: Her name is Theresa Mendoza i want you to get me info about her

Him: Enemy?

Me: no, not at all

Him: then?

Me: she is just a person of interest

Him: as in li..

Me: i don't pay you to ask questions i already know were she lives Dash gave me her information

I took the paper out and gave it to him..

Me: her address and everything

Him: this is definitely going to be easy

Me: that is why im paying you less for it

Him: ill get to it

Me: ill hear from you

He stood up and walked out while Sway walked in..

Me: getting a lot of visitors so early in the morning

He walked around the office..

Me: what can i do for you Detective?

He turned and looked at me..

Him: have you thought about what we discussed the other day?

Me: No

He came and sat down across me..

Him: time is running out Barca

Me: for who?

Him: you really don't know what i am capable of or do you?

Me: is that a threat?

Him: if you wanna have it this way then good luck

Me: Same to you

He stood up..

Him: you can go back to your house it's clear

Me: thank you

He walked out..

I picked up the phone and called Dash..

Dash: Bangladesh Hotel, Dash speaking hello

Me: it's me

Him: Morning what can i do for you?

Me: what did she say?

Dash: she said that she wanna think about it first

Me: what's there to think about?

Dash: i don't know but that's what she said would you like me to persuade her any further?

Me: No ill take it from here

Dash: if you say so

I put the phone down..

I took out the paper with her information and i picked up the phone again and dialed her number, she didn't take that long to answer..

Her: Hello

A sweet angelic voice that hit deep in my coldest heart..

Her: Hello?

Me: It's me, it's Barca

She kept quiet for a while..

Me: are you still there?

Her: Yes i am still here

I cleared my throat..

Me: have you thought about the offer?

Her: what offer?

Me: didn't Dash talk to you?

Her: About?

Me: the job offer?

Her: what job offer?

I chuckled..

She laughed..

Her: i don't know what you talking about Sir i think you got the wrong number

Me: i am not playing

Her: i am not playing too i don't know what you talking about

Me: Ther..

Her: you have a lovely day

She hung up. I put the phone down and laughed a little..

My assistant made her way in..

Her: i thought i heard some noise

Me: Hey

Her: Wow you laughing and smiling?

I kept a straight face..

Me: i don't laugh or smile

Her: that's why im surprised.. Coffee?

Me: No

Her: ill be at my desk if you need anything

I nodded..

She walked away..

Me: wait

She came back..

Me: was i really laughing?

Her: Yes i heard you

I felt a warm feeling in my heart..

Me: okay you can go to your desk

She walked away, i stood up and made my to the small mirror and looked at myself. The inner devil reflected all covered in flames which can only signal one thing, war between our souls, i got a sharp pain in my heart again i put my hand on the wall to prevent myself from falling as the pain intensified in my mind i retained a picture of Theresa with her beautiful smile to get me through this pain..

13

THERESA

I was leaning against the kitchen cupboard with a mug in my hands drinking tea, i had just dropped the kids off to school and now i have to do a bit of cleaning and cook something for them so they can eat later. I was thinking about the call that i had with Calvin, so weird were did he even get my number from? But again he is Calvin Barca. His voice was still stuck in my eardrums i could still hear his laugh too found myself smiling alone...

Someone cleared their throat and stood next to me, it was Mpho.

My mood changed.

Him: Can we now talk?

Me: about what?

Him: Why you acting so cold towards me?

Me: Maybe it's the girls you sneak in here while i am not around, this is my Mother's house for you to be disrespecting it like this!

Him: i am sorry Theresa it was just something like having fun at the club after deejaying, get a hook up and.. It hasn't happened lately

Me: you are very disrespectful and i want you out of here

Him: now you overreacting

Me: i am overreacting? This is not a Brothel! I have my Brother and Sister living here

Him: i already said that i was sorry it hasn't happen and it will never happen again

Me: it better not happen again because if it does i swear...

Him: no need for threats

I went and put the mug in the sink.

Him: i miss you

Sleeping with Mpho was wrong, he is young and most of all i don't want to infect him. We use protection yes but again what if one day we just get caught in the mood and we fail to use protection? What's going to become of him?

He came and hugged me from the behind kissing me on my neck..

Him: let's go have a couple of minutes together

Me: Mpho...

Him: Just one round

I got his hands off me..

Me: Mpho i cannot do this anymore

Him: why?

Me: it feels wrong

Him: now it feels wrong?

Me: i just don't wanna do this again plus CJ i don't want him finding out about this

Him: we have been careful as to not make CJ suspicious

Me: We might get caught somehow

Him: Come on Terry

He tried touching me again but i stopped him..

Me: Stop it!!

He was getting a bit annoyed.

Him: what is the real Problem here?

Me: there's no problem just.. I can't do this anymore with you

Heard a knock at the door..

He walked out to the bedroom..

Me: im coming

I went to open and it was Mrs Bhengu, is she lost again?

Me: Mrs Bhengu

Her: Theresa dear

Me: are you lost again?

Her: no i came to see you

Me: ohhh uhm please come in

She made her way in..

Me: can i get you anything to drink?

Her: Tea

Me: ill make you some cup of tea

She was holding a watch in her hand that had pink straps..

Me: how are you holding up?

Her: i am holding up very well and how are you?

Me: i am fine

Her: and the kids?

Me: they are fine too

Her: i wanted to tell you something but seems like i forgot

Me: forgetting is very usual for old people

Her: i am getting old i guess

Me: that's a beautiful watch who is it for?

Her: Yes that is what i wanted to tell you.. The watch i was going to give it to my Granddaughter

Me: You have a Granddaughter?

Her: 5 years old and very beautiful

Me: that's the first im hearing of this

Her: i just met her

I made her the cup of tea and gave it to her..

Her: But her Father hates me

Me: Why?

Her: i can see through his dark soul

Me: dark soul?

Her: are you going to work?

Me: Yes Mrs Bhengu

Her: when are you coming to church dear?

Me: i will come one day

Her: what scares you so much about coming to church?

Me: i am not scared Mrs Bhengu

Her: aligning yourself with the Lord is important child don't be a headless chicken that goes around in each and every direction don't lead yourself Astray

Me: Mrs Bhengu church is not everything

Her: Maybe isn't but God is everything

I shrugged my shoulders...

Her: you have already met him have you?

Me: met who?

Her: The Devil Theresa, he is very deceitful. Will possess you with everything just to get you away from connecting with God

Advertisement

he will remind you of every pain and every struggle you have been through just to make you hate God

Me: as always you have lost me, i don't know what you talking about

Her: this is when you need to start being strong in faith you need salvation child

Me: Mrs Bhengu i don't mean to be rude but... I have to start cleaning and preparing for work later

Her: Of course dear let me not keep you

She stood up..

Her: have a lovely day at work

Me: thank you

She took the watch and walked out..

.

.

CALVIN

I thought that the sharp pain was going to kill me it was intense that i couldn't even breath, it lasted for at least a minute or two before it went away..

I needed a bit of some fresh air so i drove up to the hospital to see my Princess, she seemed better today than she had been the previous days..

No Parent can wake up one day and dedicate their child's life to the devil, i never meant to make Wendy pregnant because of what i have gotten myself into over the years. But to save Claire's life i had to dedicate it to the dark world, if i didn't she was going to be a blood sacrifice. Everyone can say this is my fault and everything but i didn't choose to be evil, all i know is that i grew up with a lot of hate and anger towards certain people and certain situations. That hate, that anger made me vulnerable to the call of the devil..

Me: Princess

Claire: Daddy

I walked up to her and kissed her on her forehead.

Me: you look better today

Her: i didn't get a headache today

Me: that's good

The Doctor walked in..

Dr: Mr Barca

Me: Doc

Him: how do you do?

Me: i am doing well and you?

Him: im doing good

Me: My Princess seems better today

Him: She is matter of fact i can even discharge her

Me: Today?

Dr: there's no need for surgery as yet she's doing very well so why not?

I looked at Claire..

Me: Wanna go home baby?

She nodded..

Me: you can discharge her

Dr: ill get the forms

Me: uhm Doc

Dr: Yes Mr Barca?

Me: that paper we talked about remember?

Dr: already wrote it for you I will bring it too

Me: thank you

He walked out..

Claire: is Mom going to fetch me?

Me: No Baby you going to be staying with Daddy from now on

Her: but i live with Mom

Me: i know baby but things are going to change from now on

Claire: Okay Daddy.. Who is going to look after me when Dad is at work?

Me: Dad is still trying to get someone

Wendy stormed in raving like a mad person..

Wendy: you bastard!!!!

She came to me and started hitting me on my chest..

Her: where do you get keeping me away from my Daughter?

Me: You have proven to be a bad mother

Wendy: you can't look after her and you know that!!!!!!

Claire: Mommy stop!

Me: you better leave now

Wendy: you can't take my Daughter away from me!!!

I held her and took her out of the ward to the corridor..

Me: Go!!!

Wendy: you will not get away with this, i am going to fight you!

Me: See you in court

She wiped her tears..

Her: I made one mistake just one mistake and you do this?

Me: one mistake that could've killed my Daughter now leave!

Her: Claire is my life what am I going to do without her?

Me: i get full custody and you will get visitation rights under supervision

Her: bullshit Calvin!

I heard Claire talking behind me..

Claire: Daddy

Me: Wendy leave

She looked at Claire..

Wendy: this is not over Calvin you hear me?

Me: loud and Clear

She walked away. I picked Claire up..

Claire: Why is Mommy angry?

Me: Mommy is crazy just like Grandmother

I sat her on the bed..

Me: we gonna have to get you some clothes

Her: pink or white

Me: whatever you want

She smiled..

Me: let Daddy make a phone call

I called Theresa again but she didn't pick up, since my Daughter is going to be living with me i will need someone to look after her too and Theresa will do..

I called Sterling..

Him: Barca

Me: found anything?

Him: Yes i do have some info

Me: Find something that i can blackmail her with

Him: on it

Me: good

I hung up..

I need something to blackmail her with into accepting this job..

14

CALVIN

I didn't think that babysitting Claire for the whole day was going to be this draining, after she got discharged we went out to eat lunch. I had to get her a few clothes since most of her clothes were still at Wendy's then i had to go back to the office with her. Having a 5 year old in the room with you while trying to get your work done is very difficult, she was touching everything asking a lot of questions it was like i had 5 of her inside my head...

After getting my work done at the office we drove to the hotel, i was exhausted i just wanna hit the shower and then go straight to bed..

Tomorrow is going to be another dreadful day with her, i don't think im going to be able to pull this through all by myself..

I signed at the reception then we made our way to my hotel room..

Claire: Daddy are we going to sleep here?

Me: Yes Princess

Claire: what happened to our house?

Me: it's being fixed

Claire: i wanna go home to Mommy

Me: we have already spoken about that Claire

Claire: Mom's place is better

Me: Well Mom isn't exactly my favorite person right now

She kept quiet..

Me: you can call Mommy when we get to the room how about that?

She nodded..

Me: im really trying Claire cut me some slack

We got to the room and i noticed it wasn't locked..

Me: Stand here Princess don't walk into the room

Claire: Why?

Me: just do it Claire don't come in Daddy is going to get you

She rubbed her eyes..

Her: Okay

I put her things down and then slowly opened the door, i walked in carefully hoping to not make a sound..

My first thoughts were that Sway might be inside but that theory went down the drain when i heard a voice singing and

water running in the bathroom. Not the best singing voice but it was a familiar voice..

"Love Please save my soul remove all the pains and sorrow, it's more than I can take.. Sunshine a ray of hope, arise and hide my shadows and make me happy again...again"

I listened to her singing and humming, something about her sweet voice that just hits deep within..

I didn't realize i was too much into her singing until I heard Claire calling me..

Claire: Daddy

I turned and looked at her..

Me: Claire didn't i tell you not to come in?

She held on to the door with a frown..

I walked out and got her staff, i put them on the bed..

Claire: who is singing Daddy?

Me: It's..

Theresa walked in the room from the bathroom..

Theresa: i am so sorry i thought i was alone

I looked at the time..

Me: we just early

Her: i am done i was only cleaning the.. The basin

She is the most beautiful thing i have ever seen, even in her maid uniform..

Her: i will be out of your way sorry again

She pushed her trolley to the door... Me: Wait

She turned and looked at me was almost like the sun just came out to lit up my soul..

I got my laptop and sat Claire on the bed..

Me: You can live stream cartoons Princess on showmax

Her: they have the little mermaid?

Me: i think so

Advertisement

i think they have the smurfs too

Her: Cooooo!!!

Me: what you do is that you go here and..

Her: i know Daddy i have a laptop at home

Me: okay Miss know it all Daddy will be right back

I kissed her on her forehead..

I made my way to Theresa..

Me: After you

She pushed the trolley out and i followed her.

I closed the door and we stood next to my room..

Her: that's your Daughter?

Me: Yes

Her: she's adorable

Me: thank you

We stared in each other's eyes for a Moment..

Me: on a serious note now have you thought about the job offer?

Her: i have

Me: and?

Her: ill take it

That was a relief..

Me: good choice

Her: Ah ah ah not soo fast there's a condition

Me: a condition?

Her: you have to apologize

Me: for?

Her: for manhandling me that night

Me: what are you smoking?

Her: you threw me on the floor i hurt my arm don't you think you should apologize?

I chuckled..

Me: i am Calvin Barca i don't apologize

Her: Well then..

Me: you make it sound like i hit you and i didn't

Her: you used force on me! (shouting)

Me: don't ever raise your voice at me ever again

Her: or what? You going to throw me down again?

Me: Theresa i am.. I am a very bad man, you being like this with me is only pissing me off and you don't wanna piss me off

Her: Good night Calvin

She walked away but i grabbed her by her arm and threw her against the wall, not only that but i pinned her there while still roughly holding her arm..

Me: what you doing makes me think that you seriously don't have an interest in living!

Her: i am not Charity or the other women who were your pushovers!

I raised my hand at her but I didn't hit her..

Her: do it Barca and see if i won't have you locked up! I do not tolerate violence against women!!! Hitting a woman doesn't make you a man it shows how weak you are!!!!

That provoked me and when a snake is provoked what does it do? It strikes!!!

I kissed her i was expecting her to maybe push me away but she didn't, she was all for the kiss..

I went and kissed her neck while she had her hand running at the back of my head...

Kissing on the neck turned into gentle bites that made her moan a little, i then slightly bit her...

Her: Ouch!!

That's when she pushed me off...

She put her hand on that area and came back with it, it had a bit of blood..

Her: Shit Calvin are you serious right now?

Though i bit her, the bleeding followed after when I was done so i had no blood in my mouth.. I couldn't taste it i was clean.

Me: Resa i am...

Her: Stay away from me!

She walked away..

Me: Theresa wait!!! You gotta get help or you will die!

Her: fuck you Calvin!

Shit!! That bite comes with a venom, if she doesn't get help in the next few minutes she is going to die..

I went back to the hotel room..

Claire was singing along to whatever she was watching..

Claire: Daddy look..

Me: that's nice Princess

I took my phone and called Sterling, i went to the bathroom..

Me: Pick up.. Pick up.. Pick up..

He didn't pick up..

Me: Fuck!

I went back into the room..

Me: Princess get your jacket

Her: are we going somewhere?

Me: Yes Baby we going home

Her: i thought daddy said that home is....

Me: Claire get your jacket!!! (yelling)

She freaked out a bit..

Her: i want Mommy (crying)

Me: Im sorry Princess i..

I felt a bit dizzy i was hearing the Devil's voice in my head and Claire on the other hand her crying wasn't helping either..

Devil: "Sizin için Onun sevgi sizin Antidote lakin onu h lak
yaxşı iř Calvin idi" (her love could've been your Antidote but
now you killing her, good work Calvin)

All i wanted was to locate my daughter and just get the fuck out
of there..

Claire: Mommy!! I want Mommy (crying)

Me: Claire were are you Princess? Come hold Daddy's hand

I was turning around busy trying to locate her since my vision
was becoming blurry, the voices were making me dizzy..

15

THERESA

Driving from the hotel to home in the state that i was in it was going to be a total drag, all of a sudden when i got to the changing room i felt an unbearable pain on my neck were Calvin bit me and i felt my whole body being paralyzed. I drank an asprin thinking that I was coming down with fever and a serious headache but something was not right, something was not right at all..

My veins in my arms and other parts of my body were green then after they turned black and that's all that i remember before collapsing.. I don't know what happened next but when i slowly opened my eyes i could see that i was at the hospital. I was still feeling a bit dizzy, disoriented, and weak my neck was still in pain..

I saw the Nurse standing right across my bed, close to the small steel table and the table had a tray ontop...

Nurse: We will ask you personal questions later but for now there's one important question i need you to answer for me. What type of snake bit you?

Snake? What is she talking about?

All i remember is Calvin and the kiss that we shared, i remember the intense sexual feeling that we shared in the corridor next to his door..

Me: Calvin..

Nurse: Mam' please just concentrate for a minute or two before the dose wears off, what type of snake bit you on your neck?

Me: Cal.. Calvi..

Nurse: i have about 10 injections in front of me they all antidotes that can counterfeit the Venom of the snake that bit you, please Mam' you need to help me so i can help you. You have only a few minutes to live. The Venom is already in your blood, it is making its way into your heart..

My eyes were wondering around, the room seemed like it was spinning. I heard another voice..

Voice: Did she tell you?

Nurse: No Doctor she.. I can't get her to tell me what type of..

Dr: then give her all the objections you are wasting time!!

Nurse: Yes Sir

Me: Calv.. Calv..

Dr: Now Dammit!!!

The Nurse took the first injection but she dropped it....

Dr: Are you kidding me?

Nurse: i am sorry

Dr: If this patient dies it will be your fault!!! You should know that if a person presents with a snake bite and they don't remember what type of snake that bit them, you give them all the injections!!!

I felt like death was starring me right in the face, i felt my heart giving up. I was shutting down until i heard a voice whispering in my ear..

Voice: "Viper snake"

I turned on my side and i swear that Calvin was standing right next to my bed but he didn't look like his normal self. He had fire burning eyes, and a snake tongue kept on protruding from his lips..

Him: "Viper snake"

I was too weak to even scream or let the fear of seeing him like that make me cringe..

Me: Vi.. Vip.. Viper..

Dr: It's a Viper! Get to it now or we are going to lose her!!

The Nurse quickly grabbed the injection and jabbed me with it while i was about to pass out..

.

.

CALVIN

I had to at least get a fix so my mind could think straight and be able to be aware of what was going on...

When the cocaine started working i was able to be myself again, and i took Claire and we checked out of the hotel. Before we went home i quickly went to check on Theresa in the changing room and i found her on the floor i couldn't leave her like that, i called the ambulance for her so that she can go to the hospital and get help quickly before the venom kills her. I was very worried when i drove home i kept on asking myself if Paramedics came on time, did she make it to the hospital? Those were the questions that circulated my mind..

When we got home i put Claire straight to bed she had already passed out when we were on our way home, she had cried herself to sleep earlier....

After putting her to bed i went to take a quick shower while Theresa was still on my mind..

After showering i did cocaine one last time while standing at the bathroom counter next to the basin..

Even when I was holding that small plastic i was shaking that's how frightened I was of what I did to her..

I poured a bit of it on the counter before sniffing i looked myself in the mirror and In a few seconds the devil appeared, surrounded by flames as always.

Him: you saved her

Me: i did?

Him: she had only less than a few minutes to live and that whisper saved her life

That was me taking chances, i didn't think that she was going to hear me whispering to her, but since she had a part of me inside of her which was the venom it didn't make her deaf to my whisper..

Me: i want out

He started laughing..

Me: i have served you for too long now i want out

Him: Calvin you don't understand

Advertisement

you sold your soul to me there's no way out i gave you riches, i made you powerful! You would give up power for love?

Me: i cannot control what i feel for her

Him: that's why you have me inside of you to help you be rid of that filth called love

Me: i can't keep on hurting her like this, it kills me more inside

Him: You killing yourself by trying to win an emotion that never existed in you, Calvin the deal was Claire's blood in exchange for your riches! But since you have served me for all these years i decided to spare Claire's life i am not going to make another compromise because of "Love"

Me: It's not something that i can control!

Him: You have controlled it over the years! Calvin anger and hate exist in you they dominate that's who you are!!!!

Me: then why am i feeling something different for her?

Him: You poisoned her is that what you call love?

Me: Something is not right

He stretched out his hand, and his hand made it into my heart again..

Him: i ripped it off once don't make me do it again!

He got his hand off..

I was in pain, excruciating pain. I held on to the counter..

Him: Remember we are one!!!

He disappeared and i felt him creeping his way into me again and the mirror cracked.

I went down on my knees while still holding on to the counter trying to catch my breath... I was relieved to know that Theresa is okay..

.

.

THERESA

I was feeling a bit better the following morning apart from the pain on the side of my neck but, i was feeling better nonetheless..

The Dr walked in he wasn't alone, he was with another gentleman..

Dr: Good morning

Me: Morning

Dr: how are you feeling this morning?

Me: better but i still feel the pain on my neck

Dr: it will go away soon

Me: i hope so.. Uhm Doc

Him: Yes?

Me: when am i going to be discharged?

Dr: Tomorrow

Me: Can't i go home today?

Him: unfortunately not yet today we need to rehydrate you, gotta get those IVs going to give you all the strength you need

CJ and Zerra must be worried wherever they are..

Me: can i at least make a phone call?

The other gentleman cleared his throat

Dr: Yes you can but after the Detective has asked you a few questions

Detective: thank you Dr i promise i won't take long

Dr: 10min

Detective: it's more than enough

The Doctor gave us some privacy..

The Detective came to me.

Him: Detective Sway

Me: Theresa Mendoza

Him: i am in charge of a case that is a bit similar to yours

I maintained a comfortable sitting position..

Him: a few days ago a car was found abandoned on the side of the road, the driver was unfortunately found dead. He had been bitten by a snake

Me: That's sad

Him: He was not in an area were a snake could just creep up and bite him

Me: that's terrible

Him: i was informed that you were bitten by a snake too the Dr said before you blacked out you said it was a Viper

I put my hand on the gauze that covered the bite of the snake on my neck and just like that i dated back to what happened last night. The kiss, Calvin lowering himself to kiss me on the neck then the stinging sensation..

I gasped for air.

Detective: Miss Mendoza are you okay?

I slowly nodded..

Him: i need you to tell me what really happened and how you got bitten by a snake at such a classy hotel

I kept quiet for a while..

Me: i don't remember what happened Detective

Him: you will have to help me

Me: i wish i could but unfortunately I can't remember what happened

Him: if you don't talk do you know that we will have to shut the hotel down if it is infested by snakes?

Me: it was just one incident

Him: one incident too many

Me: i don't know what to tell you

Him: maybe I will have to go to the hotel and if Mr Bangladesh doesn't talk further steps will be taken

Me: Further steps?

Him: we cannot endanger innocent people

Me: but..

Him: have a good day Mam'

If this Detective goes and have Bangladesh Hotel shut down, what's going to become of me? I will be jobless..

Me: wait

He stopped..

Him: i know what happened

He took out a tape recorder....

Him: let's hear it

Me: i was cleaning one of the hotel rooms, room number 10A
as always

Him: then what happened?

Me: what happened is that..

I felt my left ear going deaf..

I cleared my throat.

Me: uhm what happened is that Mr B...

My right ear went deaf too, when i tried to speak i heard a
voice speaking a language that i didn't know..

"Sizin qulaqları yalnız mənim səs səs eşitmək insan səsinə kar
edək olun"

It was like the voice was roaming around the room, i only heard
it. I tried to be attentive to the Detective's voice but i saw his
lips moving. I couldn't hear what he was saying...

I held his hand..

Me: i am going deaf!!!!

I saw his lips moving but i couldn't hear the sound...

Me: I can't hear, i can't hear you!!!!

.

.

CALVIN

Voice: "Sizin qulaqları yalnız mənim səs səs eşitmək insan səsinə kar edək olun"

That morning i was back face to face with the devil, only this time we had an encounter while i was taking a shower..

Me: Stop it!!!

Voice: "Sizin qulaqları yalnız mənim səs səs eşitmək insan səsinə kar edək olun"

Me: Stop it you hurting her!!!!!!!

I knew that not only was i hearing him, but Theresa was too because after the snake bite we somehow have a connection..

It became silent..

As i was ready to proceed finishing off taking my shower i was pushed out of the shower by a great force that i broke the shower door..

I found myself on the floor with pieces of the broken shower door glass..

Shit!! Clear is in the other room.

I got up and i was bleeding the pieces of glass had cut through my skin, i grabbed a towel and rolled my lower body with it..

Claire opened the door and walked in..

Her: Daddy

Me: Princess

Her: i am scared what is going on?

Me: i need you to listen to Daddy okay Princess?

She nodded..

Me: take off that bracelet and then i want you to pray the same prayer that Grandma taught you at the hospital..

Her: But...

Me: Just do it Princess

She tried taking off the bracelet but something grabbed her leg and she fell..

Claire: Daddy!!!!!!

Me: Claire!!

As she was being dragged across the room i tried running to the door but it closed, locking me inside the bathroom..

Me: Claire pray!!!! Take off the bracelet and say the prayer that Grandma taught you

She wasn't being attentive, she was screaming and i also heard weird noises in the other room. I was still trying to open the door but it didn't wanna open, how do I get out of here and save my Daughter??

CALVIN

Sometimes our children suffer for our Sins, Parents out there should know and keep in mind that whatever you do has an impact on who your child will grow up to be. If you drink there's a chance that your child might mimic that if done in their presence. Whatever you do make sure your child doesn't see because what children see, they will do. With my Claire it's different i sold my soul to the devil and she is suffering for that, i cannot have my child suffering for something that they don't know about..

The door finally did open and it was silent on the other room, first thing i did was to search for Claire and she was cuddled on the floor next to the bed very terrified, the bracelet was next to her. Even when i touched her she freaked out, i don't know what she saw or experienced while i was locked up in the bathroom but whatever it was, it was something that frightened her very badly...

I had no choice but to call Wendy to come and get Claire, i think Claire will be much safer away from me. She was happy and relieved to see her Mother walking in she ran up to her and Wendy picked her up, she couldn't stop crying.

Claire: Mommy i want to go home

She was holding on to Wendy for dear life.

Wendy: It's okay baby Mommy is here

Wendy looked at me..

Wendy: What happened? Why is my Daughter so scared?

Me: it's kind of a long story

Wendy: i am taking her home with me

Me: i think that's a good idea

She couldn't believe my sudden change of heart...

Wendy: What's happening Calvin?

Me: just make sure that Claire is safe, i might not be able to see her that much anymore but i will always call

Wendy: It's fine

I went up to her and i tried to hug Claire but she didn't want, she was still scared...

Me: I think it's better you guys leave

Wendy: i think so too

I took Claire's things and walked them outside to Wendy's car, after this i wanna go to the hospital to see Theresa. I need to know if she remembers that i was the one who bit her....

.

.

THERESA

Detective: she just started screaming that she can't hear anything and she held on to my arm very tightly, from how terrified she was i don't think that she was being paranoid it was real Dr.

The Doctor put something in my ear.

Dr: when did this happen?

Detective: a few minutes ago

Dr: can you hear me?

Me: Yes

Dr: seems like her hearing is fine but i think we will have to run more tests tomorrow

Me: Tomorrow? I thought that tomorrow i was going home

Dr: It looks like the snake venom left a bit of impairment you having hearing problems what's next, kidney failure? I think we need to run more tests

Me: i have to go home

Dr: Miss Mendoza i am afraid that's not going to be possible

Me: You don't understand i have two siblings they are under my care and right now they probably worried sick about me because they don't know were i am

Detective: how old are they?

Me: they are underage

Dr: you don't have anyone who can look after them?

Me: i look after them

Dr: well in that case we will have to call social services so that they can intervene

Me: No!

Dr: If there's no one to look after them..

Me: ill call my Neighbour to check up on them she's an adult

Dr: that's better

Me: can i borrow a phone?

The Detective gave me his phone and I called Mpho

Advertisement

i lied about my "Adult Neighbour" i just didn't wanna say Mpho and have them ask a lot of questions then concluding that he is unfit to look after them..

Mpho: eita

Me: Hey it's me

Mpho: Theresa? Where the hell are you? We worried sick!

Me: Calm down i am at the hospital

Mpho: Hospital? What happened?

Me: had an accident at the hotel

Mpho: are you going to be okay?

Me: Yes the Dr just has to run more tests

Mpho: when are you going to come back?

Me: i am not sure

Mpho: what about CJ and Zerra?

Me: i am going to need your help with that

Mpho: are you mad? Theresa i am a DJ always have to be in a club

Me: Please Mpho i just need this one favour if i don't get a person to look after them they will call social services and they going to take them away. I cannot have my siblings taken away from me please

He exhaled loudly..

Him: Fine just get your shit together and come back home!

Me: thank you

I hung up..

Dr: sorted?

I nodded...

Detective: seems like you been through a lot today maybe i should just come back tomorrow

Me: that's better

Detective: thank you Dr for allowing me to talk to your patient

Dr: you welcome

I gave him back his phone and he left....

Dr: get some sleep

Me: Uhm can i ask you something?

Dr: what is it?

Me: i am..i am hiv positive and i am on medication i don't have my meds with me

Dr: why didn't you say so?

Me: i was unconscious

Dr: of course you were very disoriented when you came, look get some rest and then I'll have the nurse bring you something to eat later and medication

Me: thank you

He made his way out and i tried to sleep...

I woke up a few hours later surprised to see Calvin in my ward holding flowers.

Him: i am sorry i didn't mean to wake you up

Me: what are you doing here?

Him: i.. I came to see if you are alright

He put the flowers on the shelf..

Him: get well soon

He walked away..

Me: i know what you did to me

He stopped..

Me: what are you?

He turned around..

Me: Detective Sway was here and he wants some answers or else he is shutting down Bangladesh Hotel

Him: what did you tell him?

Me: nothing as yet

Him: what are you going to tell him?

Me: the truth

Him: what is the truth?

I laughed..

Me: Really Calvin?

Him: what is the truth?

Me: you bit me

Him: no i didn't

Me: you bit me and somehow poisoned me that's why I am here

Him: that's crazy talk

Me: that is the truth! You and i know it

Him: who is going to believe your "truth" what Human being can bite you and inject a snake venom in your system?

He came closer to me..

Him: if you tell the truth they will lock you away for good in a mental institution and your siblings will be taken away from you

Me: how do you know about my siblings?

Him: i know everything about you

Me: get out before i scream

Him: no need too, have a nice day

He walked out. Calvin is a bastard! Not only that but he is a human snake too, i know what he did to me no matter how much he wants to deny it!

I heard a voice speaking..

Voice: you need to help him

I looked at the door and Mrs Bhengu made her way in...

Me: Mrs Bhengu? How did you know that i was here? How did you get here?

Her: you have to help him Theresa

Me: help him?

Her: you need to help him be rid of this devil that's consuming him

Me: i don't understand

Her: you can only fight evil with good, hate with love

Me: i can't fight the devil i don't even know how to pray i am not even a Christian

Her: you need to help him dear

She walked away..

Me: wait Mrs Bhengu i don't understand! Mrs Bhengu!.. Mrs Bhengu!!

I felt someone holding my arm, it was the nurse.

Her: are you okay?

Me: did you??

Her: did i??

Me: did you see the old woman that walked out?

Her: what old woman?

Me: Mrs Bhengu she is..

I looked at the shelf and i saw the flowers...

Me: was Calvin here? Mr Calvin Barca?

Her: Yes he settled your hospital bill and left

Me: but you couldn't see Mrs Bhengu?

Her: are you okay? Should i call the Dr?

Me: what is happening to me???

What was happening to me? Nothing makes sense...

CALVIN

After visiting Theresa at the hospital i made my way to the hood to go and see Mrs Bhengu, Wendy's Mother. She might have answers for me, she is spiritually connected to heaven...

I made my way in and went to knock at the door, being here is me taking a huge risk she's heavenly protected and i might find my way in a never ending war with heaven..

She opened the door...

Her: Calvin?

Me: i know that i am the last person you wanna see

Her: that's true but it's good to see you please come in

me: i can't and you know why

She made her way out..

Her: something says you not here for a visit, you here because you seeking answers?

Me: that's true

Her: let's take a walk

We went and took a walk down the street...

Her: what would you like to know?

Me: i think that I am in love with someone but the devil won't let me be i need to break this connection

Her: the devil played music for you and you danced

Me: i want out people that i love are getting hurt

Her: i don't have all the answers Calvin

Me: that's not possible

Her: i am a mere human being i cannot tell the future but what i can say is that..

Me: is what?

Her: true and pure love might just save your heart but prepare for war that's coming the devil won't let your soul go that easily, you brought this on your self, you sold your soul for money, Respect, and power. Now innocent people around you are suffering

Me: Mrs Bhengu i don't know how to fight off this devil

Her: when the time is right you will meet someone if you haven't already, she is your Antidote to the venom that you possess she will help you but again know that you will loose everything that you sold your soul for. Are you ready for the battle that's coming?

17

THERESA

[3 DAYS LATER]

I got discharged from the hospital yesterday what i looked forward too was to just get home and rest the whole day. Green Cross is a private hospital, everything i needed was catered to me but i just couldn't get that good rest. It wasn't my home and it definitely wasn't my bed, i didn't feel that much comfortable. Today i was looking forward to getting back my life i did the usual, woke up and prepared the kids for school i drove them to school but instead of returning back home i headed straight to Bangladesh Hotel. I needed to talk to Dash about why i haven't been at work for those days, i think he doesn't know about my snake incident. My neck was still a bit painful from that area were Barca bit me, the Nurse told me to keep the gauze attached to that area to prevent an infection since It was now a slight open wound...

I went to his office and surprisingly he was waiting for me too.

Dash: it's good that you showed up now because i wanted to talk to you

Me: I wanted to talk to you too

Dash: I'll go first

He leaned forward with his elbows balancing on top of the table.

Dash: I had an interesting visitor yesterday.. Detective Sway

My heart jumped i told Sway what he wanted to hear and not the truth of what happened that night...

Dash: He said that you told him that a snake bit you while you were cleaning one of the rooms?

I slowly nodded..

Dash: A snake in my Hotel?

Me: I know it sounds crazy

Dash: do you have any idea what you have done?

Me: No

Dash: he is threatening to have this hotel shut down because it is supposedly infested by snakes

What!! Detective Sway told me, no he promised me that there wouldn't be any repercussions should i tell him what happened...

Me: Son of a b.. (whispering)

Dash: It is a son of a bitch situation i guarantee you that

Me: he promised me that there wouldn't be any repercussions

Dash: He is a detective! He will make promises that he can't keep

Me: I am very sorry Dash i didn't think that he would take it this far

Dash: Let me ask you a question and i want you to think very hard about how you going to answer it because it will determine your future in this hotel

I swallowed..

Dash: did a snake bite you? Was there a snake in room 10A?

I kept quiet for a minute..

Dash: Teresa

Me: Okay can I tell you the truth?

Dash: That's what i wanna hear

Me: Cal..

I closed my eyes..

Me: Calvin Barca bit me

Dash: What?

Me: Calvin Barca is not a human being he is a vicious snake

He looked at me and then burst in laughter..

Me: Dash i am not crazy

Dash: you are crazy! Do you even know who Barca is?

Me: i know what happened

Dash: Barca bit you? How can a human being just change into a snake? Barca has been my client for a long time now and none of what you saying has been witnessed in this hotel! Especially Barca being a snake

Me: so what's going to happen now?

Dash: what's going to happen is that you are fired! You are crazy Teresa and you need help

Me: what? Fired? Why am I being fired?

Dash: you were one of my best Employees but now you bringing problems for me and you know that i don't do problems, especially problems that threaten my business!

Me: Dash please you cannot fire me i need this job

Dash: stand up and leave

Me: this is not right i am going to take this matter to the CCMA

Dash: you wouldn't dare

Me: try me

Dash: You are useless! You don't have even a simple qualification and that's a matric certificate take me to CCMA flower and i will make your life a living hell. I will frame you for something big that you end up in jail and your Siblings will end up in a home is that what you want?

Me: you are heartless

Dash: Stand up and get out!!

What am I going to do now???

CALVIN

I have about 7min left before my meeting with an important client Dr Bannet, i have to convince him why he should renew his contract with us. He is by far the most difficult client that i have.. While i was still waiting for him, i had Sterling pop in to give me the latest on Theresa. I was standing by the window just checking out the view..

Sterling: i found only one interesting thing about her

Me: What is that?

Sterling: her medical records, she is hiv positive

I turned and looked at him..

Me: she is what?

Sterling: she has a past

Me: hooker?

Sterling: not really just a girl who was lost after her Mother died

Advertisement

she was looking for ways to support her Siblings

Me: she is too beautiful, innocent, and humble to have such a cruel disease

Sterling: why the sudden interest in her?

Me: that's my business

Sterling: should i keep on digging?

Me: no it's fine you can continue focusing on Sway

Sterling: i will do just that

My assistant called me...

Me: is he here?

Her: Yes always early

Me: Please show him in

Her: Yes Sir

Sterling: let me go ill call you when i have something on Sway

Me: you do that

He walked out and then Mr Bannet walked in after a while accompanied by my assistant..

Her: should i get you anything to drink?

Me: No thank you

Her: ill be at my desk

She closed the door on her way out..

Me: Mr Bannet

Him: Barca

I gave him a handshake..

Me: Please have a sit Sir

He sat down..

Me: Whiskey?

Him: not today

Me: how is the wife and kids?

Him: can we just get straight to the point

Me: ill get your file

Him: no need, i want to pull out

Me: Mr Bannet that's not what i expected

Him: Barca ever since i started giving my patients your pills i have had more deaths than people recovering

Me: i understand and..

Him: toxicology report on one of my deceased patient showed high amounts of cocaine in their system

Me: maybe the patient was just a crack head

Him: i had your pill tested and it has cocaine

Me: you had my pill tested?

Him: Yes and i am going to sue you

I picked up the phone and called my assistant...

Her: Sir?

Me: you can get us something to drink maybe coffee

Bannet: i don't want anything to drink

Me: get us something

Her: Yes Sir might take a bit long you know how the coffee machine works

Me: it's fine we will wait

Her: okay

I put the phone down...

Bannet: i am not here for coffee

Me: have you told the Police about your findings in my pill?

Him: not yet but i am going too

I stood up..

Me: you wouldn't do that

Him: why not?

I walked up to him and put my hands on his shoulders..

Me: would be tragic if something was to happen to you

He stood up...

Him: are you threatening me?

I sat him down forcefully..

Me: i don't do threats

His heart started racing, i saw a bit of perspiration running down from the side of his face..

Me: Fear.. that's what keeps me going

I bit him on his neck and he screamed but it's not like someone was going to hear him, my assistant was not at her desk...

He struggled to breath, he got off the chair but fell. He tried crawling to the door..

Him: what did you do to me?

I showed him my devilic appearance hoping he will suffer from shock to speed up his death....

THERESA

I have been sitting on the couch crying ever since i got home from the Hotel. I was very heart broken that I lost my job over something that's not even my fault. What am i going to do? I don't have a letter of recommendation i don't have anything to help me look for a new job let alone a matric certificate..

Me: ohhh God what am i going to do? (crying)

I heard someone knocking..

Mrs Bhengu: Theresa are you there?

If only she knew how this was not a good time..

Her: i know you there dear

she won't stop until i get up and open for her. I got up, wiped my tears and went to open for her..

Me: Mrs Bhengu

Her: May i come in dear?

Me: now is really not a good time

Her: just one cup of tea dear for poor old me

I opened the door wider and she made her way in..

Me: i will heat up the kettle

She sat down at the table..

Her: you seem upset about something

Me: i lost my job

Her: That's awful

Me: i know

She remained quiet..

I put my hands on the kettle with tears falling, i had my back against her...

Me: i don't know what i am going to do

She remained quiet..

Me: Mrs Bhengu

I tried turning around but my body was frozen i couldn't move..

Me: Mrs Bhengu

Voice: "Don't turn around Beloved"

Me: who are you?

I forced to turn around but i still couldn't..

Me: what's happening to me?

Voice: "Don't turn around beloved"

Me: Why?

Voice: "no human being is meant to see me, i am not of the flesh"

Me: Where is Mrs Bhengu?

I felt my hands getting hot and the kettle was making a sound...

Me: Ouch!!!

The kettle was already boiling the water..

Mrs Bhengu: she's very beautiful like her Mother she only differs because she's mixed race, my beautiful Granddaughter Claire

I turned around and looked at her..

Her: i think the water is boiling dear, I looked around..

Her: Theresa are you okay?

Me: i.. i...

Her: should i make us the tea? I use honey now do you have bees to make honey?

Me: what is happening to me?

Am i now losing it?

18

THERESA

Everything i did from cleaning to laundry and everything else that day i kept on thinking about what happened earlier in the morning when Mrs Bhengu was here. First of all she visited me at the hospital, today she comes into my house and I hear a voice that i am not familiar with and then my body freezes i can't move and in a nick of time everything is back to normal. No something is not right, if i was sleeping i would say that i was dreaming but i wasn't sleeping i was wide awake....

Since Barca bit me weird things have been happening to me, things that i cannot understand or explain.. My siblings were surprised to come back from school and find me at home still doing chores. I like to keep busy when im stressed to avoid over thinking..

CJ: Pumpkin i thought that you would be at work

I looked at them i wanna tell them the truth but at the same time i don't want to get them worried..

Me: they have given me a few days off since im not feeling well

CJ: your evil boss gave you a few days off?

Me: he is not evil and yes he did

CJ: Pumpkin I've seen you going to work very sick at times and all of a sudden your boss has a heart?

Me: you ask a lot of questions go get changed

Zerra was awfully quiet its not like her to be this quiet not greet me or anything..

Me: Pumpkin

She ignored me..

Me: Zerra

I followed her to the bedroom..

Me: what's wrong with you? Did something happen at school?

CJ: we have to talk to you about something that happened at her school

Me: what happened?

CJ: when you were at the hospital and we didn't know we went to school without pocket money i heard Zerra was eating off from the dustbin

Me: what?

I looked at Zerra..

Me: Pumpkin is that true?

CJ: i was called from my school to hers and her teacher asked me a few questions with a social worker present

Me: Mpho didn't give you guys anything?

CJ: Mpho only showed up the following morning to drive us to school he had a hangover wasn't even aware of what was happening.

Hearing that my little Sister was eating off from a dustbin that broke my heart into a million pieces..

Zerra: i was hungry Theresa

If only you knew how I felt at that moment...

She took out a letter from her bag and handed it to me..

I opened it and read, i was being summoned to her school tomorrow by the social worker and the teacher for an important meeting at 08:00am...

Zerra: are they going to take me away from you?

Me: i would never let that happen

I looked at CJ..

Me: what did you tell them?

CJ: the truth

Me: what is the truth?

CJ: ill go and change

Me: CJ did you tell them anything that might make social services wanna take you and Zerra away?

CJ: we have no food Theresa

Me: what do you mean we have no food?

CJ: have you checked the fridge?

Me: we have food i was going to cook

I went to the kitchen to check the fridge and CJ was right, we had no food. Tomorrow was supposed to be pay day i only have R50 on me and since Dash fired me i don't think he is going to pay me tomorrow..

This is not happening, what am I going to do? I closed the fridge with tears following..

CJ: are you alright Pumpkin?

I wiped my tears..

Me: i lost my job

I turned around and looked at him..

CJ: how? Why?

Me: It's a long story

CJ: what are we going to do?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: i don't know CJ

CJ: this won't look good tomorrow when you have that meeting with the social worker

I pulled the chair and sat down while crying..

Me: i wish Mom was here

He sat down too across me..

Me: you should change so that you can go and buy bread

CJ: you should let me Deejay at the club

Me: No!!

CJ: the money will help us

Me: i want you to focus on school

CJ: school is not putting food on the table does it?

Me: don't talk to me like that!

CJ: then stop treating me like a child!! (shouting)

We are held up against the corner by this difficult situation now we are biting each other's head off..

CJ: im sorry

Me: it's fine but you are not going to be a deejay ill find a way

I coughed..

CJ: are you alright?

Me: im fine

CJ: if i remember well you said Mr Barca offered you a job

Me: i am not going to take it

CJ: why not? We are stranded

Me: Barca is not.. he is a very bad man

CJ: that doesn't matter you just do your job then he pays you that's all

Me: CJ no!

CJ: it will keep us together

Me: i said no!

CJ: why not?

Me: because.. I might die he is not what you think he is

CJ: i don't understand

Me: just go get changed so that you can go buy bread and milk i am sure Zerra is hungry. He stood up and went to go get changed..

.

.

CALVIN

I hid Mr Bannet's body somewhere out of sight in my office incase someone walked in, for the whole day i had to work with a dead body in my office. When everyone had knocked off later on and went home i called Sterling to come and get rid of the body, he came in dressed like a cleaner with a dustbin to put the body in. He will have to go bury Mr Bannet somewhere far from here

Advertisement

were no one is going to find him the last thing i need is Sway snooping around.....

When he left with the body i cleaned the blood stains and put the chair back getting everything back to normal before i made my way to Bangladesh Hotel. i needed to have a drink and get me someone for the night...

I went to the bar and had a couple of drinks waiting for Dash to send me one of the call girls.

I looked at the time and it was taking a bit long and just when i was about to leave he showed up with a redhead.

Me: took you long enough

Dash: all my girls were booked i had to ask Nikki to cancel her date with Mr Khuma

Nikki smiled at me..

Me: she will do for tonight

Dash: should i have room 10A prepared for you?

Me: im taking this one home with me

Dash: you have never taken any girl home with you

Me: there's always a first time for everything

Dash: well then enjoy

Me: i will do a transfer first thing tomorrow morning

He left us at the bar..

Nothing was special about Nikki other than her being a redhead and her cleavage popping out..

Her: i guess dreams do come true

Me: in what way?

Nikki: all the call girls wanna do you

Me: All?

Nikki: we talk at the townhouse and here i am tonight with you

Me: if you do me good then i might do you every weekend

She came and sat ontop of me..

Nikki: i can do you all night

She kissed me..

Me: then we should probably get out of here

She got off me..

Nikki: let's go

She led the way and i followed her, she had a very sexy walk...

We made our way down to the parking lot in the basement
were i had parked my car..

Nikki: are you sure that we cannot just go up to one of the hotel
rooms?

Me: i feel like having a good time at home

We got inside my car and I looked at her..

Me: I have never had a redhead before this should be fun

She smiled..

I fixed my rear view mirror and i saw Mrs Bhengu sitting at the
back seat. I quickly turned around and the backseat was empty,
but i could still see her in the rear view mirror..

Mrs B: Calvin listen carefully..

Me: How come i only see you in the mirror?

Mrs B: Tomorrow morning you must go and meet Theresa at the Cayoti primary school room 5, she might need your help just as much as you going to need hers soon, 08:00am don't be late.

She then disappeared..

I checked the backseats again and she wasn't there. Nikki put her hand under my chin and made me to face her.

Nikki: what's wrong?

Me: it's nothing, nothing at all

i checked the backseats again..

.

.

THERESA

I don't know how to pray but this morning I said a prayer before leaving home for the meeting. I cannot lose my Siblings they are all that i have, i am even willing to go back to the life of sleeping around with married men just so i get money to put food on the table for them. I was tearing up all the way to Zerra's school i checked my fuel gauge and I might not even make it back home i am running out of fuel..

I parked my car and then we made our way to her class. I stopped and looked at her.

Me: do you know how to pray pumpkin?

She shook her head no...

Me: well if God saves us from this one we surely are going to church every Sunday

She nodded..

I held her hand and then we went to her class..

Her teacher was there with another woman whom i think is the social worker.

Her teacher came to us..

Her: Good morning

Me: Morning

Her: thank you for coming

Me: it's not like i had a choice

She looked at Zerra..

Her: go put your bag in your chair then i will walk you to the assembly

Zerra did as she was told..

I made my way to the other woman..

Teacher: i will be right back

They walked out..

The other woman looked at me..

Her: Miss Mendoza?

I nodded..

Her: i am Carol i am the school's social worker

Me: nice to meet you

Her: shall we?

Me: Yes

Her: ill go and close the door..

I went and sat at the table while she went to close the door, my tears just started falling this might be it..

Voice: excuse me i believe my fiancé is here? Theresa Mendoza

Carol: Mr Barca? Calvin Barca?

I looked at the door..

Me: Calvin?

He made his way in looking flashy as always in his expensive suit, i stood up..

Him: There she is

He walked up to me and then hugged me. I was dumbfounded
what is he doing here?

He broke the hug and wiped my tears with his thumb.

Him: whatever it is we going to fix it together i need you to
trust me

Me: Why?

Him: because you might be the only person who can help me
too

I looked at the door and i swear i saw Mrs Bhengu standing
there with her hands behind her, she flashed a smile..

Carol: we can get started

Calvin turned my face to look at him..

Him: shall we?

I looked at the door again and Mrs Bhengu was no longer
there..

THERESA

What is Calvin doing here and how did he know that i was here? What's going on in my life right now? I keep on seeing Mrs Bhengu, i keep on hearing voices, am i going crazy? I have never been this confused before.. Zerra's teacher was back now and we all gathered around her table to discuss this matter before the kids come back from the assembly. Calvin is going to hear that Zerra has been eating out of waste bins, that's a bit embarrassing no that's a lot embarrassing!!

Carol: First of all i am really thankful Miss Mendoza and Mr Barca for coming this morning at such short notice, i apologize if you had to drop everything for this but it is important.

Barca: I understand if it concerns my fiancé then it is important ill drop everything

He extended his hand to hold mine.

Carol: such a United front that both of you are showing us i wish that it was the same with the kids involved

Barca: Kids involved?

Carol: that's why we here because of Miss Mendoza's siblings you didn't know?

Barca: Me and Theresa haven't been really communicating that well we having problems

Carol: I am sorry to hear that

Barca: Yes but i.. I lo..

He looked down and then closed his eyes..

Me: Are you alright?

He put his hand on his chest..

Carol: Mr Barca?

He opened his eyes..

Barca: i am fine sorry about that

Teacher: i think that we should proceed with the matter at hand

Barca: Yes please

Carol: Miss Mendoza i believe that you are taking care of your siblings?

Me: Yes my Mother passed on leaving me to care for them

Carol: how old are you?

Me: 25

Carol: do you have a job?

Me: had

Carol: you no longer working?

Me: No i was fired

Carol: Care to explain?

She was writing everything down..

Me: it's a long and complicated story

The last thing i want to do is talk about the snake bite incident because she is not going to believe me..

Carol: the issue that brings us here is what happened the day before yesterday

Barca: what happened?

Carol looked at the teacher..

Teacher: We do a lot of outside activities and also activities that can get one dirty, such as painting. Kids usually go home after school dirty and..

Me: and?

Teacher: Zerra came to school dirty day before yesterday to show that her uniform had not been washed the previous day when she got home

Me: I was..

Carol: can we please allow Miss Ntuli to finish

I remained quiet...

Teacher: Not only that but during lunch her friends came to get me and showed me Zerra eating from a trash bin

Barca let go of my hand..

Barca: What?

Teacher: i had to bring in the social worker because it was child negligence

Me: It wasn't negligence it was a mistake

Teacher: A mistake that could've killed Zerra, there's a lot of dirt and sharp things that are disposed everyday what if she ate them?

Barca: Theresa what am i hearing?

Me: i was admitted at Green Cross Hospital and i had a friend look after them

Carol opened the file..

Carol: Mpho? Your Brother told us about him

Me: Yes Mpho, he was supposed to take care of them while i was away and drive them to school

Carol: he didn't your Brother told us that he fought with his friend that previous night because he came home drunk and said something like "I am fucking your sister and you don't even know about it" then they had to walk to school

Barca: i think that i need to have a word with my Fiancé how old is this Mpho of a person?

Carol: 20 years of age

Teacher: Mr Barca you weren't aware of this?

Barca: not at all

Carol: do you have anything to say for yourself Miss Mendoza?

Me: i have taken care of my siblings ever since my Mother passed on

Teacher: No relatives?

Me: No

Teacher: What happened to your Father?

Me: i don't know him

Carol: all three of you have different Fathers?

Me: Yes and we don't know our Fathers

Carol: Miss Mendoza i don't think that you are a fit guardian to look after your minor siblings

Me: it was just one incident

Carol: there could've been other incidents that we are not aware off

Me: i would never do that to my siblings on purpose

Carol: i think that we have to take them away and present this case to a judge and permanently find another home for them

Me: No!!!!

I stood up..

Barca: Toots calm down

Me: No!!! You are not taking my Siblings away from me!!

Teacher: getting all worked up like this won't help the situation

Me: You know what we done here, i am taking my sister and we going home

I went and got Zerra's bag.

Carol: Miss Mendoza

Teacher: should we call the police or something?

Barca: No.. Let me just talk to her

I walked out with Barca following me..

Barca: Theresa

I kept walking and he grabbed my arm..

Barca: Calm the fuck down would you now?

I stopped and looked at him with tears falling..

Barca: you in deep shit and walking away won't help

Me: i can't lose my siblings they my life

Barca: I saw that now calm down and let me handle this if you want to see your siblings again

I calmed down..

Barca: let's go back in there and let me handle this will you?

I nodded..

We made our way back to the class..

Barca: Fucking a 20 year old what's that about? You needed a dick that bad?

Me: funny how that's all you heard from what was said

We got back in and sat down..

Barca: I apologize for her behavior, seems like Toots has a lot of shit to fix...

Carol: seems so

Barca: i would like to propose something a better solution for everyone

Carol: Listening

Barca: How about i foster the kids for now?

Carol: Huh?

Me: what? there's no way im letting you near my siblings

Barca: is it?

Me: Yes!

Barca: well then Miss..

Carol: just call me Carol

Barca: Carol here can find them a home one that's going to be far away were you won't see them again

He had a point there..

Barca: Fucking 20 year olds has made you think like a 20 year old

Me: don't you just have sweet things to say to me!

The teacher and the Social worker just looked at us..

Barca: Can i foster the kids Carol in the meantime?

Carol: Well it is.. Im afraid Mr Barca you seem like a busy person how will you take care of them?

Barca: how about i worry about that?

Carol: I care about their safety and stability

Barca got all serious..

Carol: i said how about i worry about that?

They looked at each other for a while, Carol was stationary, she didn't move not even blink..

Barca: So?

Carol came back to Planet Earth..

Carol: Honestly Speaking Mr Barca you are a well respected and admired man i think that the kids will be safe in your care for the time being just until Miss Mendoza gets another job and sort out her life

Me: Just like that?

Teacher: I also see that as a good idea

I looked at Barca

what did he do to them? did he posses them?

Carol: tomorrow we will come to your house and check if it's a safe place and I will also need you to sign some forms that you will be fostering the kids

Barca: i would like them to move in today

Carol: It's still fine

Barca: I believe we are done here

Carol: for today yes we are

We all stood up..

Barca looked at The teacher...

Barca: would you mind if her little Sister misses school just for today? i think her and my fiancé have a bit of some shopping to do and everything

Teacher: not at all

The kids got back from the assembly..

Barca headed straight to Zerra i don't even know how she knew her because he has never met her before... He knelt down on one knee to be at the same level as her.

Barca: Hey

Zerra looked at her..

Barca: do you know who i am?

Zerra shook her head no..

Barca: i am Barca.. Calvin Barca and i believe you are Zerra?

She nodded..

Barca: It's good to meet you and i want you to know that as from today you will be living with me

Zerra looked at me..

Zerra: Is Theresa coming too?

Barca looked at me..

Barca: I hope so

Zerra: and CJ?

Barca: CJ is definitely coming

Barca whispered in her ear and Zerra laughed..

Barca: do you wanna go shopping? and maybe get something to eat?

Zerra: Yes please

Barca: then let's go

He got up and picked her up...

Barca: you not so heavy

Zerra: Theresa come

I was very attentive to the sweet moment that Calvin was having with Zerra, i don't know if it was a front to fool Carol and Miss Ntuli but it was a sweet moment that almost made me tear up..

I turned and looked at Carol..

Me: Thank you

Carol: thank him

I went to them and we walked out to his car.. He unlocked it.

Barca: you can go inside sweetie

Zerra went inside and closed the door..

Barca might be evil and everything but deep down i know that he won't hurt Zerra and CJ but i was still a bit worried..

Me: Thank you for everything

He leaned against the car..

Him: i offered you a job why didn't you take it?

Me: After what you did to me i..

Him: you should've taken the job for your Siblings than having your Sister live like an animal that's..

Me: i know you don't have to say it

Him: i hope you will change your ways and stop fucking 20 year olds

Me: Why does it matter to you? We not in a relationship are we?

Him: you right it doesn't matter

Me: Calvin

Him: Yes?

Me: How did you know that i was in trouble?

He turned and looked at me..

Him: i just knew

Me: You can't just know

He kept quiet for a few seconds..

Him: i am about to do something and i want you to follow through

Me: What is that?

He pulled me closer and kisses me. Everytime when we kiss i feel something different than how i feel when i kiss Mpho or how i have felt before when i kissed other guys. The kiss spiraled feelings i never knew existed, it made my knees weak and swept me away swiftly to a place were uncomfortable

feelings don't exist, his smooth lips the way our tongues danced in a rhythm it was soo breath taking..

He broke the kiss but we were still so very close to each other the kiss was not even that intense but we found ourselves catching our breaths..

He gently pulled my hair back behind my ear and my eyes were fixed on his pinkish and toxic lips..

Obviously we feeling something for each other, why can't he say the words? why can't he say "I love you" i was very close to him and I could feel how fast his heart was racing, his hand around my small waist that tightly locked mr close against the buckle of his belt.

No words were exchanged but our hearts spoke a lot.

Me: Your heart is not beating normally

Him: i know..

I put my hand on his chest and moved it to were the heart beat was intense and that area felt warm, it was very warm..

Me: What's happening to you?

He smiled it wasn't a wide smile just a slight curve from the corner of his mouth...

Him: You happened

He was breathing abnormally..

Me: Calvin are you okay?

I removed my hand from him, he put it back..

Him: don't

Me: Why?

Him: Because you bring the human side of me, you remind me that i am still a human being. You remind me that i have a heart and have human blood flowing through my veins

He took off his jacket,he unbuttoned his shirt..

I looked around..

Me: uhm i don't think you wanna do that here

Him: Relax i am not stripping

He showed me a tattoo on his breast it was a blackish and reddish heart..

Him: it started as a red and a black heart two separate hearts that just fused together and became one..

I ran my finger on the tattoo of the heart...

Me: what does it mean?

Him: i don't really know

He buttoned his shirt again..

Him: all i know is that somehow you supposed to help me

Me: help you?

Him: i think that i.. I am in love with you

After saying those words he put his hand on his chest and leaned against his car.. He looked like he was in pain.

Me: Calvin?

He looked down while closing his eyes, i looked around and Carol was standing by the door of the classroom with Miss Ntuli..

Me: should i get help?

I attempted to walk away and get help but he held my hand around my wrist area.. It was a tight grip

Me: Calvin.. What's wrong?

Him: He is taking over

Me: who?

Him: take Zerra and get in your car then drive home

I didn't know what was happening..

Him: Now Theresa!!! I don't want him to hurt you!!!

I went to the other side and got Zerra out

Me: Come Pumpkin

I quickly made my way to my car but stopped, i can't leave him alone is soo much pain.. I can't live him like that..

I turned around and he got inside his car still in pain i don't know how he was gonna drive in that state, but he did.. I closed my eyes and held on tightly to Zerra.. How am I going to help Calvin seems like what he is going through is bigger than me...

I just thought of Mrs Bhengu today she's gonna get a visit from me and she will tell me what the hell is going on!

Me: mental unstable my foot!

When she just randomly appears she is sane but when she shows up at my house she act all insane!

CALVIN

I drove home instead of driving to the office, i cannot show up at the office in soo much pain that will make my assistant call an ambulance. There's nothing wrong with going to the hospital but unfortunately there's no western medicine that can cure what i am suffering from, the Doctors might give a diagnosis according to the symptoms and hypothesis that i am suffering from a cardiovascular disease of some sort but it's much worse than that. What i am going through is far beyond any human understanding, it's a spiritual battle of two souls trying to outstand each other in occupying my body, my mind and my spirit. I made a deal with the devil it seemed good at that time because I was full of hate and anger i cared about nobody until Claire was born and things started slowly changing. Now there's Theresa in the picture and things have greatly changed.....

The pain's intensity seized as soon as i was away from her, it got a bit better but it was still there. The first thing i did when i got home was to look for my cocaine, i needed a fix to calm me down, to do away with the pain completely. I was very upset i am in love with Theresa but it seems like i cannot be with her or even be close to her, i wouldn't forgive myself if i hurt her this time around. As long as this devil is still occupying my being i will never trust myself with her.

I never knew how deep the pain of loving someone and at the same time not being able to be with them can do until i experienced it myself. Good! I found the last small pack of cocaine probably my last fix for today i need to get more...

After sniffing i looked at myself in the mirror the calmness and euphoria that cocaine can bring to a body and mind is something i cannot put into words. Everything was just moving slow around me, my mind froze for a few seconds and then took me to another world free of the one i was standing on..

The Devil appeared in the mirror as always...

Me: i won't let you hurt her

Him: me? you are the one who is hurting her

Me: i feel something special for her, she means the world to me and I love her

Him: is this what you call love? face it Calvin and then accept it! You and her will never be

Me: she is meant to help me be rid of you

Him: how is she meant to help you when you can't even be close to her for at least an hour?

Me: i will find a way

Him: i already have, if you "Love her" then you will keep her safe by staying away from her! Look at yourself, look at what love is doing to you. You are getting weak! she's draining you off your strength and power!

I wiped my nose..

Him: Stay away from that girl and she gets to live

Me: No there has to be a way

He laughed..

Him: she can't even pray

Advertisement

she doesn't believe in anything how is she meant to fight me?
She is weak and i will crush her

Me: i will fight you

Him: how can you fight me? we are one remember?

He vanished after saying that..

I was now experiencing something different coke has never made me dizzy but i was getting dizzy and bleeding from my nose, my vision was becoming blurry my whole system was shutting down. I collapsed...

.

.

THERESA

Zerra and i had to take that 30min walk back home, my car had no fuel. I haven't walked in a long time, it was hot, I was sweating, i was thirsty and a bit hungry too. I glanced down at Zerra she might be hungry too. It's sad because we have no food anymore, and with Barca being like that i don't even know that he is going to fetch them today..

We passed our house and went straight to Mrs Bhengu's house, a lot of things are happening that i cannot explain i think Mrs Bhengu has all the answers..

Mrs B: Come in

I opened the door and we walked in.

Mrs B: what a pleasant surprise.. to what do i owe this visit?

Me: i need to talk to you

Mrs B: Zerra would you like some juice and a sandwich?

Zerra: Yes please

Mrs B: go sit in the tv room dear and i will bring the food to you

She walked away to the tv room..

Mrs B: you look thirsty?

I sat down..

Me: i could use a drink

Mrs B: there's this recipe i am trying but seems like i am going to need a very unique ingredient

Me: what is that?

Mrs B: bees i am trying to make a honeycomb

She prepared Zerra's sandwich..

Me: you want Bees?

Mrs B: Yes that will help

Me: cut the mental unstable bullshit we both know you not crazy

She turned her back against me..

Mrs B: we going to church on Sunday aren't we?

Me: excuse me?

Mrs B: if God got you through that you promised your sister that you guys will go to church

Me: how would you know that? It was only Zerra and i

She kept quiet..

Me: who or what are you?

She took time to reply to that question..

Mrs B: who i am or what i am is something that you won't understand, at least not for now

She came with a glass of juice and gave it to me..

Me: did i see you at the hospital? did i see you today in Zerra's class? Was it you?

Mrs B: you welcome dear for the juice

She took the sandwich and juice to Zerra and then came back..

Mrs B: relax you not going crazy you were seeing me

Me: how did you do that?

Mrs B: because it is my duty to look after you

Me: your duty from where?

Mrs B: i wish i can tell you everything Theresa but unfortunately you not ready as yet

Me: my life is a hurricane i am seeing things and you told me to stay away from Calvin because he is evil but at the same time you want me to help him? I can't even make out if you are evil or good

Mrs B: you are mad at God for a lot of things your heart is closed and shutting him out, you want nothing to do with him or so you think that's why you failing to understand everything

Me: i am a no believer

Mrs B: but yet when you in trouble or confused you turn to him first than anyone else that is a sign that you do believe in him

Me: i believe in nothing!

Her: everything will start making sense as you go along

Me: Mrs Bhengu stop speaking in riddles please and tell me what the hell is going on!!!! (yelling)

Her: soo much quarreling deep inside of you

Me: i guess you won't tell me what is going on

Mrs B: how can I tell you when you don't believe it will sound gibberish to you

Me: it is gibberish!

Her: Theresa the fight that awaits you is bigger than anything that you have ever known it is your destiny to save Calvin from the hand of the devil!

Me: i am not God!

Her: no one asked you to be

Me: whatever my destiny is tell him that I am not meant for it, how can i fight the devil when i don't even believe in God

She smiled..

Me: God chose the wrong person

Her: God is perfect in every way he is never wrong

Me: he is this time around

I stood up and went to get Zerra..

Me: stay away from us okay?

Mrs B: as much as i want too but i can't

Me: Stay away from us!!!

I headed for the door..

Mrs B: Theresa

I came here to find answers and i left with no answers, such a waste of time...

.

.

CALVIN

I slowly opened my eyes and i was laying on the bathroom floor with blood stains on the floor. I got up and my shirt had blood stains too..

Me: what the fuck happened?

I looked at the small plastic on the counter it was empty, i must've had a lot of coke. I was still feeling a bit somehow but at least I was fine..

I took off my shirt and then got my cell phone out, i have to call Theresa and have her prepare the kids i have to go and fetch them. I looked at the tattoo of the heart as it reflected in the mirror..

Theresa: Hey

Me: Toots

Her: are you okay?

I walked out to sit down on my bed..

Me: Yes i am fine now

Her: are you sure?

Me: Yes

Her: what happened?

Me: nothing you should worry about have you prepared the kids? I'll be there to fetch them

Her: uhmmm about that

Me: what about it?

Her: i don't know Calvin after what happened i don't think you will be able to look after them

Me: would you rather have them taken away?

Her: no

Me: then you will just have to trust me

She exhaled..

Her: fine ill pack their things

Me: good ill be there soon

I hung up and then called Sterling..

Him: Barca

Me: are you busy?

Him: not really

Me: i need you to do something for me

Him: what is that?

Me: i need you to take care of someone for me

Him: do you have any info?

Me: just a name.. Mpho

Him: it will be hard tracking them down with only a name

Me: i know i will give you more information later on hopefully

Him: you want me to kill him?

Me: No just beat him up

Him: only that?

Me: for now Yes

Him: ill wait for more information

Me: you will get it

I hung up... I don't know why it was getting to me that Theresa slept with this boy but each time I think of it i feel like killing him myself! The thought of him touching her makes my blood boil.

21

THERESA

I was helping the kids to pack their things Calvin called and said he is on his way. I must admit that Calvin is strange i don't even know were he got our home address because he didn't ask for it, but then he is Calvin Barca i am sure he has a PI.

It only dawned now on CJ that i really do know Calvin because all along he didn't believe me but when i got that call from Calvin saying that he is on his way that's when CJ believed....

My Siblings and i have never been away from each other, i hope that i get my life together so that they can come back home i cannot live without them..

Me: Guys you know this is just temporary right?

CJ nodded..

Zerra: are you coming?

Me: No sweety

Zerra: Why?

I went and knelt down next to her and brushed her hair back..

Me: It's complicated but i promise that i will call you everyday okay? and CJ is going to be there.

I wish that i can go with them but i can't, it seems like when i am close to Calvin or when we have a moment somehow i cause him pain literally. What happened at the school still haunts me, he was in soo much pain i even thought that he was gonna collapse and die there in front of me. I don't want that event happening in front of CJ and Zerra it will traumatize them, what if he has that episode again and he hurts me in front of them. I don't know who or what Calvin is but whoever he is, he definitely isn't a human being..

Zerra wasn't enthusiastic about moving away from home she has been frowning ever since we started packing.

I looked at CJ, he went and talked to her at least they more closer to each other because they together most of the time.

CJ: you are sad?

She nodded..

CJ: but we going away to a very big house. There's going to be a pool, you can watch any cartoons you want on TV and we going to eat any food that we want

She slowly but surely started get into the moment..

CJ: i am sure that your room is going to be very beautiful it's going to be a room fit for a princess wouldn't you like that?

She smiled..

It hurts hearing CJ talking like that i wanna give them the world have them be normal like other kids but unfortunately I have nothing i can even barely buy them something nice to eat, it's mostly Pap&fish or bread all the way. It has been always like that even when i was working because my salary had to cover a lot of things..

CJ: are you dating him?

Me: No he is just helping us

CJ: i wouldn't mind if you date him, he is better than Mpho

Me: so you know about me and Mpho?

CJ: he couldn't keep it a secret anymore especially when alcohol is involved

The conversation i have been trying to get away from..

Me: CJ i..

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: must be him.. Are you guys ready?

They both nodded..

Me: let's go

We went to the kitchen i looked at them one last time before opening the door, i pray that Calvin will treat them good...

I opened the door and it was him, even in casual he still rocks the classy look.

Me: Please come in

He walked in intoxicating me with his cologne. I closed the door and turned to them i swear that CJ's jaw was about to drop down on the floor..

Me: That's my Brother CJ and you have already met Zerra

Barca: How are you young man?

CJ: good

Barca: been looking forward to meeting you ever since I heard your name being brought up at that school meeting

CJ didn't know what to say he couldn't believe that it was Calvin himself in our kitchen..

Me: CJ why don't you guys go get your bags?

They both rushed to the bedroom, Zerra was just following CJ's lead.

Me: he is kind of surprised seeing you here

Him: i can see that

He ran his eyes around..

Me: you can have a seat

Him: no im fine thank you

My home is not good enough for him i see..

Me: who is going to look after them when you at work?

Him: since you not working anymore you can come over in the mornings to prepare them you will only leave when i knock off, i can have a car pick you up early tomorrow morning?

Me: sounds like a good plan

After that minor conversation

Advertisement

we stood there in total silence until CJ and Zerra came back with their things..

Calvin: you can go put them in the car i am coming

He gave CJ his car keys..

Calvin: you press this button here to unlock

CJ took the keys and they made their way out..

Me: i would offer you something to drink if i had

I went and stood next to him, he folded his arms..

Him: when was the last time you had a good meal?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Him: we can go and eat out with the kids ill bring you back

Me: No it's fine

He gently squeezed my cheek..

Him: don't worry about them they going to be fine and i don't know why you refusing to move in with us we "engaged" remember

Me: we have problems remember?

He chuckled..

Me: Plus i don't wanna kill you

Him: kill me?

Me: Seems like everytime when im close to you, you get a heart attack

Him: what makes you think you that special to give me a heart attack? Am I having one right now?

Me: remember what happened at the school earlier

The moment went from being sweet to being sour..

Me: who are you Calvin? Something tells me that you not a complete human being

Him: not who i am, what i am rather

Me: what are you?

He turned and put his hand on my cheek, he gave me a faint smile..

Him: the less you know the better

I put my hand on top of his..

Me: i am not scared of you

Him: i know but i am scared for you

Me: Why?

Him: i will find ways for you to be safe around me

Me: what if i can help you?

Him: i like your courage but what i am no human being can help me..

Everytime when we together i can say that forces under and above clash, we can be together but at the same time we can't be together..

He leaned and tried to kiss me but i faced down..

Me: The last time we did that you almost died in front of me

Him: i didn't know you cared about me, thought i was just a total stranger to you

Me: you are

We laughed..

Him: how is your wound? Is it healing?

Me: it is

him: Theresa i am sorry i didn't mean..

Me: somehow i feel that it wasn't you

Him: i don't understand?

I looked at him..

Me: i look deep inside your eyes and i know that you will never hurt me

Him: deliberately never

He still had his hand on my cheek..

Him: you very beautiful

Me: thank you

The door opened, Calvin lowered his hand. It was Mpho...

His facial expression when he turned and saw us standing there confirmed that he was shocked, his eyes were deceiving him...

Mpho: i saw the car parked and i..

He came to us and stretched his hand out to Calvin..

Mpho: Calvin Barca such and honour to meet you, you an inspiration

Calvin looked at his hand then looked at him..

Calvin: It's Mr Barca to you

Mpho: Yes of course i apologize just that i am very happy to see you and congratulations for making another mill

Calvin: i don't make a mill i make mills you really have to get your facts straight

Mpho: i look like a fool right now but for all its worth i look up to you a lot, i look at you and i know that i will make my first million soon

Calvin folded his arms again and cleared his throat.

Calvin: what is it that you do?

Mpho: im a Dj

Calvin: how is entertaining drunk people every night with music going to make you a million again?

Me: Calvin..

Mpho: i don't plan on being a Dj forever i want to own a club someday

Calvin: when i was your age i already had a vision and goals i was working on establishing my own pharmaceutical company and you telling me that a club can make you a net worth of 100

million? don't waste my time boy i work with people who have serious ambitions

Mpho was discouraged and a bit hurt i could see it.

Mpho: well then sorry for wasting your time ill get out of your face

Calvin: that's the only sensible thing you have said throughout the conversation

He walked away..

Me: that was not nice

Calvin: i wasn't trying to be nice

Me: you don't have to treat people like that

Calvin: like what? You want me to sell him a false dream so he can hold on to it and use it to get into your underwear?

I tried slapping him but he held my hand...

Him: don't ever try to do that again it's going to piss me off

He let go of my hand..

Me: Why are you so threatened by him?

Him: threatened? He is a Dj for fuck'sake!

Me: then there's no need to be jealous!

Him: i am not jealous of a fuck and pass childish relationship!

Me: i think you should leave now

Him: with pleasure

I went and opened the door for him so his arrogant ass can leave, when he had walked out I closed the door and leaned against it with my eyes closed.. That was intense...

Mpho: when were you going to tell me that you fucking Calvin Barca? Are you his call girl?

I opened my eyes and he was standing at the door way..

Mpho: how am i supposed to compete with that?

Me: compete for what? I am not in a relationship with you or him! There's no need for that

I made my way to my bedroom..

Mpho: so you saying that you were using me?

Me: Mpho don't start with me you knew it was just about sex

Him: Theresa..

I closed the door on his face...

.

.

CALVIN

It was very quiet and awkward in the car i didn't know how to communicate with them, they look uneasy and a bit nervous. I don't blame them moving away from a place that you have called home for all these years to a new house can be challenging for anyone. You feel like a piece of you has been left behind and worse you don't know what awaits you were you headed.....

I was relieved when we got home at least they can find something to do that's going to occupy their minds so that they can forget about home just for a little while..

I decided that Zerra can stay in Claire's room it's girly looking with pink&white colours, she is going to be comfortable here..

Me: do you like it?

Zerra: Yes

CJ: see its fit for a princess

She smiled while looking around..

Me: now it's time to show you yours

We all went to find a suitable room for him..

Me: you going to be fine here?

CJ: it's cool

Me: you guys can make yourselves comfortable don't be scared to do anything ill call for food to be delivered, i am sure you hungry

CJ: Mr Barca thank you for helping my sister out

Me: please call me Calvin and don't sweat it, we all need a helping hand once in a while

He put his staff away..

CJ: can i ask you something?

Me: you can ask me anything

CJ: are you dating my sister?

Me: no we are not dating

CJ: then why are you helping us?

Me: because it's the right thing to do

CJ: pity

Me: Why you say that?

CJ: you two could make a good couple she's a very good person

Me: i know that but your sister and i.. I don't think that we can be together

CJ: you married?

Me: No i am not

CJ: then what?

I looked at the mirror and i saw the devil..

Me: because of him who resides deep within me

The Devil flashed a smile at me with burning flames surrounding him..

THERESA

i was put down on the ground, laying on a hard object. When i checked what it was, it was wood of some sort with my hands stretched out and tied to the wooden object preventing me from getting up. I looked around and i wasn't alone i saw people standing not far away from me wearing ancient robes. I also saw guards their attire i wasn't familiar with it, it looked ancient too. Some woman was down on her knees crying, she was preventing to look at me or what was happening to me.

Me: what is going on?

Another guard made his way to me holding nails and what looked like a handmade hammer something of that nature. The weather wasn't cool at all it was windy and the clouds were getting a bit dark, i noticed that i wasn't wearing anything other than the white cloths that covered my breasts and my genital area they were bloody. My head was aching, my body was aching too and i felt something piercing through my forehead something thorny. My other eye couldn't fully open, i was in soo much pain that even crying wasn't going to help. The guard knelt down next to my right hand, he took one nail and pointed the sharp point of it on the palm of my hand i knew that he was going to pierce it through.

Me: Please no!

He ignored my plea and hit the nail against my palm to the point where it all went in. I cannot begin to explain how painful it was, I screamed as he hit it and it went further and further in with blood gushing out

Me: Stop Please!!! (crying)

He got up and came to the other side of my hand and did the same thing, it was very painful even the woman who was kneeling down she couldn't stop herself from crying. She tried to make her way to me but the boy standing next to her prevented her from doing so.

Her: בני (my son)

The guard got up and made his way down to my feet. The more I screamed the more the sky changed, the clouds got more darker and darker...

As the guard was about to hit the nail in my feet I opened my eyes and quickly rose my head up from the pillow..

I looked around my room and I was alone it was still a bit dark. I was sweating, my heart was racing I have never had a dream that felt so real and terrifying. I know that what happened to me in my dream was not something of this age but it's something that must've happened many years ago... My phone beeped making me jump, I got it and checked it was the alarm

clock i have set it to wake me up at 4:30 because i have to be at Calvin's place to prepare the kids for school...

I got out of bed still shaken by my dream and made my way to the kitchen to boil water so i could bath. I filled up the kettle with water and went to plug it in

and something strange took my breath away. Our kettle is white in colour were i was holding it i saw blood, i removed my hand from the kettle and looked at my hand. I had wounds in the palm of my hand and I was also bleeding from that area, i screamed..

Me: what's happening to me?

What was happening to me? all of this is not making any sense. I went and cuddled myself at the corner still looking at my hands and screaming..

Mpho rushed in.

Mpho: what's wrong are you okay?

I looked at him and then looked at my hands again they seemed fine the blood and wounds weren't there anymore..

Mpho: i thought someone broke in

I slowly stood up i was trembling.

Mpho: you seem shaken what's wrong?

How do I begin to explain what is happening to me without sounding crazy? He won't believe me no one will believe me. Such things don't happen at least not in the world that we live in..

I looked at my hands again.

Mpho: Theresa?

I looked at him..

Him: what is it?

Me: it's no.. I am.. It's nothing

Him: it cannot be nothing you look scared to death

He came and tried to touch me but i stepped back..

Me: i said im fine! (yelling)

Him: whatever

He walked away..

Me: Mpho i..

I looked at the kettle and it had no blood.. What was happening? Am i going insane?

.

.

CALVIN

It was now around 06:00am Theresa still wasn't here, i took the liberty to help the kids prepare themselves for school. At least their uniform came clean and ironed. It was a lot of work for me after helping them prepare i also had to prepare myself for work, then make them cereal for breakfast. I had tried calling Theresa a lot of times and she wasn't picking up..

Me: are you guys finishing?

CJ: we almost done

Sterling was not here either he is supposed to fetch Theresa and then come back to drive the kids to school. Zerra being the youngest i would've made her a lunch box but i live alone i don't buy much groceries..

Me: CJ i will give R200 for lunch and Zerra i will give you R50 but only for today tomorrow you are going to carry a lunchbox

CJ: whoa! R200 is a lot

Me: you have to get a good meal i am sure that pies or sandwiches don't come cheap from your school

CJ: food at my school is not that expensive trust me

Me: either way you still getting R200

I put on my watch..

Me: have you heard from your sister?

CJ: no

Me: she was supposed to be here to prepare you guys for school

CJ: maybe she has overslept

Me: Maybe

The kitchen door opened and closed..

Me: maybe that's her

I made my way to the kitchen and it was Sterling he was alone..

Me: where the fuck is Theresa? And what took you so long?

Sterling: i went to her place i knocked and knocked there was no answer

Me: what do you mean there was no answer? she couldn't have gone anywhere at 05:00am

Sterling: i am telling you there was no one at that house

Me: that's odd Theresa wouldn't abandon her siblings

Sterling: Where are the kids?

Me: dinning room

Sterling: are they ready?

Me: Yes

Sterling: you never came across to me as a babysitter

Me: im just helping

Sterling: you not a heartless person after all

He pat me on the shoulder and made his way to the dinning room, something was not right with Theresa..

I made my way to my bedroom to get my car keys passing the kids in the dinning room.

Me: give them money for lunch and don't forget to pick them up after school

Sterling: Yes Sir

Me: maybe pass by the mall after school get them new back packs

Sterling: i will do so

Me: Enjoy your day guys

They bid me farewell and left..

I went up to my bedroom to get my car keys this time around the devil didn't feel like showing himself through the mirror, he was physically in my room..

Me: you wormed your way out of my body?

Him: don't be crazy

I searched for my keys..

Him: you going to see her?

Me: Yes and you not going to stop me

Him: i wasn't planning on stopping you

Me: that's a first

I got my keys..

Him: it would be better if you leave her alone

Me: Why is that?

Him: let's say you don't want to be around her right now

Me: because?

Him: go look at the bathroom mirror

I rushed to the bathroom..

Me: i swear if you have hurt her...

In the mirror I saw Theresa sitting on the kitchen floor crying and shaking..

Me: what did you do?

The devil spoke behind me..

Him: not me

Me: then what's happening to her?

Him: she is starting to have the five sacred wounds

Me: impossible! Only those who are devoted get the five holy wounds. Theresa does not even believe

Him: my thoughts exactly for the first time im puzzled i don't know what's going on

Me: she seems like she's breaking i have to go there

I made my way out but he stopped me halfway..

Him: whatever you do you must convince her that what's happening is entirely a figment of her imagination she can never find out that she is experiencing the stigmata for our sake

Me: she needs to know what's happening to her

Him: Calvin you seem to forget who you are we in a battle here this girl is going to ruin my reign but besides that you and her can never be she is the good that you can never achieve

I looked down..

Me: i know

Him: go there and convince her that it's all in her mind now i can't come with you but i will give you a spell you need to enchant her so that she forgets about what happened she can never know what's happening to her Calvin.

Me: of course

Him: Close your eyes

I closed my eyes..

Him: Ahaztu zer bizi egiten duzu zure irudimena figment da

.

.

THERESA

I was hugging my legs and rocking myself back and forth while sitting against the corner, i thought this was just in my head but I keep on seeing the wounds in my hands they come and go.

Me: Lord what is happening to me? Please help me?

I looked at my hands shaking and crying..

Am I going crazy? I am going crazy and there's nothing i can do about it. I don't think there's anyone who can help me too..

I don't even know when Mpho went out i was just in a world of my own.

I sat there for a full hour feeling like i my mind was betraying me, i looked at my hands again and the wounds were there after 5min they vanished...

I stood up maybe if i could stab my eyes with a knife, completely scar my vision i would stop seeing this wounds that don't exist in my hands.

I made my way to the drawer to get a knife i looked at it with my hands still shaking..

Me: this is going to help Theresa(crying) just stab your eyes and it will go away..

I heard a knock at the door probably was the same person who was knocking in the morning..

The person kept on knocking and knocking..

Me: go away!! Leave me alone!!!Calvin: Toots it's me open up

Me: Calvin

I dropped the knife and went to open for him..

He came in..

Him: what's wrong are you okay?

I hugged him, i held on to him for dear life and cried..

Him: it's okay i am here, i am going to make it all go away

I was glad to see him here..

He broke the hug and then looked at me, he put his hands on my face...

Me: i want it to go away Calvin, make it go away

Him: i know and i am going to make it go away it will be like it never happened

He starred deep in my eyes..

Him: Ahaztu zer bizi...

Mrs Bhengu: don't even think of it Calvin Barca!

She walked in through the door and she had wings big white wings...

What is happening to me?

23

Mrs Bhengu looked totally different from her old self. She had wings and wore a glowing silver with a gold design armour, and what was off about the whole picture was the fact that she looked younger and very beautiful. She looked like an Angel..

Me: Mrs Bhengu? Why do you have wings?

Her eyes widened.

Mrs B: you can see my wings?

Me: not only your wings but you look totally different i almost didn't recognize you

Mrs B: wait you are seeing my true form? My true angelic form?

Me: you an angel?

Calvin: that is total bullshit what would an Angel be doing roaming around on earth? What Is off spirit cannot see what is of flesh

Mrs B: Theresa you need to come with me i will explain everything to you

Calvin: she is not going anywhere with you!

Mrs B: she needs to know what's happening to her

Calvin: she needs to know nothing!

Mrs Bhengu looked at me..

Mrs B: Theresa my name is Nimueh i am an angel, a female warrior Angel

Me: what?

Calvin laughed...

Calvin: That's a good one

Mrs B: you know it's true

Her Angel form vanished she went back to being a human being, her old self..

Mrs B: to earn my right back to heaven again so that i can reunite with my family again i have to correct my past mistakes and that will come from helping you

Me: i am confused Mrs Bhengu.. Nimuehm. whoever you are

Mrs B: i know but I will help you

Calvin: Mrs Bhengu i don't appreciate what you doing confusing her like this with your absurd angelic story

Mrs B: it is not absurd and you know it! My wings were clipped and i was kicked out of heaven

Calvin: Toots you cannot be believing her, an Angel on earth? You know Mrs Bhengu i have always known that you are crazy i just didn't know you were this much crazy

Mrs B: I am not crazy.. Calvin don't do this, i know deep down you scared to deattach yourself from the devil you have been rich all your life you scared to lose it all. Don't let the devil win again

Calvin: if you soo much of an Angel as you say then why are you crossing paths with me? Good and evil cannot meet

Mrs B: Good and evil do cross paths when necessary and you not evil the devil in you is evil

Calvin: i don't have to do this.. Toots let's go

He held my hand..

Mrs B: what's happening to you Theresa is that you experiencing something we call Stigmata

Me: Sigma what?

Calvin: Bullshit stigmata is a myth! How is it normal for human beings to bare the five sacred wounds of Jesus'crucifixion? It's impossible

Mrs B: It is not a myth, there's a lot of people who have experienced stigmata before

Calvin: Mrs Bhengu Theresa is fighting for her siblings and you filling her head up with this nonsense that might end her up locked up in a mental institution is not really helping

Mrs B: her destiny is to help you

Advertisement

to save you from the hand of the devil with the support of heaven and with me fighting the battle all this has been said before, as much as it's your redemption but it's also a test for me to prove one more time that i am worthy to be a warrior Angel once more

Calvin: you cannot predict the future it is not written in stone!

Mrs B: all of this was foretold

Me: Why me? I don't even believe in God

Mrs B: Yes you do, deep down you do. Unlike humans God doesn't look at the outward appearance he looks at the heart, and yours is pure that's why your love is unconditional you put others before you. Calvin can be your Grace at the same time he can be your doom, if meant to be you have to face the devil in him to help him be rid of all this evil so that you two can be

Calvin put his hands on my cheeks and kissed me...

Calvin: you mean a lot to me and I will do anything for you even if it means putting my life at risk to save yours i will gladly do so
Toots

He held my hands..

Him: i love you i know it's still early to say that but i do and i wanna be with you if only you wanna be with me too

Mrs B: don't do this Calvin you know it cannot happen like this

Calvin: as i have told you the future is not written in stone

He looked at me..

Calvin: move in with me and the kids just until we figure out what's wrong with you okay? Me: I

Him: do it for your Brother and Sister they need you forget about all this bullshit you know what's going to happen if Carol finds out about this they will take your Siblings away is that what you want???

As much as i hear what Mrs Bhengu is saying but right now i cannot risk Zerra and CJ, if i follow and entertain all of this there's a great chance that I might be found mentally unfit to look after my siblings

Mrs B: it's not over Calvin and you know it you have just declared war now you putting her life in danger but making her to come face to face with the devil at this state. Theresa i know your heart is stone cold when it comes to God, you blame him for a lot of things but know that you cannot run away from your destiny

Me: Angels can't be on earth or seen by humans

Mrs B: i am not the only one of my kind there's angel phoenix but living in her human form as Kimbella

Calvin: do you realize that everytime when you open your mouth you sound more and more crazy? He looked at me..

Him: go pack a few things then we will be out of here

Me: okay

As i walked to the bedroom passing Mrs Bhengu she looked at me and started speaking in a language that i didn't understand..

Her: תמיד מוגן להיות יכול אתה נגדך יעמוד לא רשע שום (no evil shall stand against you may you always be protected)

Calvin: what was that?

Mrs B: why didn't you bring Lucifer along Calvin? Let me guess he didn't wanna see the marks on the hands? You might think that you have won this battle but we will win the war. Evil has never defeated good!

I felt myself getting dizzy... I held on to the kitchen counter.

Me: Calvin i am not feeling good

Calvin: what did you do to her?

Mrs Bhengu walked out and i collapse..

Calvin: Theresa!

THERESA

Calvin suggested it would be better if i move in with them for a while just to be in the presence of people will do me better, it will take my mind off everything. I have to admit that a lot is happening into my life that i don't even know what's real and what's not, it's not normal for a person to have wounds randomly appear in the palm of their hands wounds that bleed without any physical harm caused. All i remember was fainting and then I woke up in Calvin's arms, after waking up he forced me to pack a few things and move in with him i did not debate i packed and then we drove to his house plus it will do me good to be in the presence of my siblings....

He tried making conversation in the car but my mind was far away, i kept on looking at my hands and thought the wounds would appear because they appeared every 10min at my house while I was sitting on the kitchen floor.....

We finally arrived at his place and i was taken by how big the house was, the furniture looked quite expensive. Calvin has pretty done well for himself, his house is the kind of house that you would only dream of owning it must've cost a fortune.

Him: and?

Me: black is not really my favorite colour but this bedroom is perfect black&white they blend in together makes it look very classy

Him: i am a man of class after all

I smiled at him..

Him: i know that a lot is happening to you right now but we are going to get through this together, i just need you to trust me

He came and held my hands..

Him: there's nothing i wouldn't do to protect you and make you feel better

I looked at him and then looked at our hands..

Him: Tell me what you saw?

I looked at him and i know Calvin is not lying about his feelings for me but at the same time i know that he won't believe me even if I tell him what happened. I saw what he did back there with Mrs Bhengu, he didn't wanna hear anything..

Him: you can trust me

He put his hand on my cheek..

Maybe I should give him the benefit of the doubt, someone who loves you and cares about you every word that comes out

from your mouth they will believe you no matter how impossible or crazy it sounds..

Me: i heard you and Mrs Bhengu talking about something..

Sigmata

Him: Stigmata

I nodded..

Him: don't worry yourself about that because it doesn't exist

Me: i need to know what it is

Him: i don't know wanna upset you any further with this

Me: Calvin please.. I need to know

He walked me to the bed, we sat down. He held my hand and kissed it..

Him: Some people have claimed to have experienced what Jesus went through during his crucifixion, they suddenly had wounds on their hands, feet, their eyes bled out, they even had the crown of thorns so they said and all of that is known as stigmata. They had the 5 sacred wounds of Jesus Christ but it said that Stigmata is only experienced by those who are devoted

He looked at my hand..

Him: i don't believe it though

Me: Why?

Him: What Jesus went through is deeper for a human being to experience i can't even take a blow how much more with a nail piercing through my Palm or foot?

I looked down, he put his hand under my chin and made me to look at him..

Him: Theresa you shouldn't let Mrs Bhengu get to you and confuse you after her husband died she never recovered no human being can tell another human being's destiny, the future is not written in stone

Me: That's true

I smiled at him after saying that..

Him: i love you and i hope you feel the same way?

Me: i do

He leaned over and kissed me..

Having a relationship with Calvin seems impossible, first of all Calvin is something that i cannot understand and i...i am sick i won't give him the future that he hopes for. I don't want us having kids one day and then finding out at a later stage that i had infected them through birth. Life is not fair, when two hearts are very much in love unknown forces always come forth to temper with the bond that exists between those two hearts.

I now know how Romeo and Juliet might have felt Love is a very powerful thing and it is worth dying for. That's why when we hurt we feel the pain in our hearts because that's where love resides

Advertisement

in our hearts..

Calvin: i will work from home today

Me: no please don't skip work on my behalf

Him: i don't feel comfortable living you here all alone

Me: Calvin ill be fine

Him: No Theresa

Me: Please go to work i will be fine i need to get used to being alone at times

Him: if something happens to you i will never forgive myself

I faked a smile..

Me: just go if it makes you feel better i will keep myself busy with cooking or watching Tv

Him: Sterling will be fetching the kids from school later on i had asked him to take them to the mall, maybe you can join them?

Me: that would be great

He gave me a shallow smile..

Him: Call me if you don't feel okay

Me: i will

Him: wait here..

He stood up and went to the closet, he came back with the first aid kit..

He took out the bandage and cut it in the middle, he used one half to wrap my left hand. He used the other half to wrap my right hand..

Him: if your Palms are covered then you won't see the wounds

Me: you do believe me?

Him: if it makes sense to you i believe it

Me: Thank you.. Thank you for everything

Him: Our love might not be normal it has many challenges but at the end it's love we shouldn't be punished that we love each other even though we different

Me: That is true

He kissed me again..

Him: I will love and Protect you even if it means losing my life in the process

I put my hand on his chest with my eyes full of tears..

Me: I wish that our love goes far i wish it lasts forever because honestly, i never had anyone love me

He parted my hair..

Him: you are an amazing woman not to be loved, and i will love you as long as you will love me too unconditionally

Me: i do love you

He kissed me one last time..

Him: i have to go keep your phone close to you i will call when i get to the office

Me: okay

He stood up and looked at me then he headed for the door..

I sighed and looked around its scary being alone, that's when everything comes to confuse my mind, happens when im alone..

I looked at my hands and I am glad Calvin bandaged them..

I took off my shoes and laid back on the bed i got my phone and put it under my pillow incase Calvin calls..

I was a bit sleepy i had been up since 4:30,i slowly closed my eyes until sleep visited me...

As i was sleeping i heard a voice calling me..

"Theresa.. "

I ignored at first but it didn't stop..

"Theresa my name is Faith.. You have to find me Theresa, for i have the answers you seek"

I opened my eyes and looked around, i was alone..

"Theresa... "

The voice was going all around the room, was like the person was moving around.. I could say that the voice sounded like that of a little girl..

"Theresa you have to find me.."

I got up..

Me: who are you?

"My name is Faith Theresa.. "

My eyes wondered around..

" Nimueh Theresa.. You and Nimueh share one voice, deep within you, you must unleash the voice that you and Nimueh share if you summon her she is bound to come"

I looked around again..

"you are powerful Theresa you just don't know yet"

I got out of bed and walked around the room until i ended up in the bathroom..

"Theresa.. Theresa.. Theresa.. "

Me: Stop you making me dizzy

"Theresa.. Theresa.. Theresa.."

I turned and looked at the mirror i could've sworn that i saw flames of fire in the mirror, i blinked and the mirror shattered as if like someone threw a brick at it full force..

I saw the pieces on the floor they still reflected flames..

I moved backwards till i came in contact with the wall..

"Theresa.. Theresa.. Theresa.. "

I put my hands on my ears..

Me: No stop.. Please stop

I sank down on the floor frightened..

.

.

CALVIN

i walked to my office all whistling and happy, Theresa brings the best in me even with my evil and coldest heart i love her and

together we are going to beat the forces that stand against our love. I made it to my Assistant's desk..

Me: Good day

She looked at me..

Her: Mr Barca

Me: beautiful day isn't it?

Her: i have been trying to call you

Me: is it?

Her: Yes Detective Sway has been waiting for you

Me: what is he doing here?

She shrugged her shoulders..

Me: Anymore messages?

Her: Well you..

I heard Sway talking behind me..

Sway: Barca i have been waiting for you

I turned and looked at him..

Me: you have?

Him: Yes we need to talk

I walked to my office he closed the door behind me...

Me: What can i do for you?

Him: i am here to ask you a few questions

Me: about?

I got myself a glass of water..

Him: I believe Dr Bannet has been your client for a long time now?

Me: that's true

I went and sat on my chair..

Him: when was the last time you saw him?

Me: A few days ago when he was here to discuss renewing his contract with us

Him: and then?

Me: and then what?

Him: what happened after?

Me: he went home

Him: is it?

Me: what is going on?

Him: Mr Bannet is missing

Me: are you serious?

Him: Yes and investigations prove that he was last seen here

Me: ohw

Him: i need answers Barca

The devil appeared he stood by the door, it's funny how he appears taking the human form of myself kinda hard seeing the evil me..

I looked at Sway..

Me: Can't we do this another time?

Sway: We have to do it now

The devil looked at Sway and his phone rang, he took it out and answered..

Sway: Detective Sway.. Yes... When?.. Where?.. I will be right there

He hung up..

He looked at me..

Him: i have to go

Me: okay

Him: we still going to talk about this

Me: we will

He stood up and walked out..

Me: you could've killed him

Devil: it's not his time

Me: what are you doing here?

Him: what were you thinking bringing that witch in our home?

Me: she is not a witch she's special to me

Him: you don't know what's at stake do you now?

I looked at him..

Him: She almost saw me in the mirror

Me: impossible

Him: Calvin you don't understand this girl cannot find out how powerful she is, she cannot find out that her and Nimueh share the same voice!

Me: she already believes that Nimueh Aka Mrs Bhengu is crazy

Him: the only thing that stands between her and finding out the truth is that little girl Faith

Me: Faith?

Him: you have to find Faith before Theresa gets to her first, if not we doomed!

CALVIN

I got a call later on that day from Sterling telling me to rush home and that something was wrong with Theresa. The whole day i have been consumed with what Lucifer said to me that i even forgot to check up on Theresa as i have promised..

Theresa feels something for me and I do too for her, but greater forces beyond our understanding seem to not want us to be Together. Dedicating my life to the devil many years ago i did so because i had no motivation to bring about feelings of love from deep within my heart that's full of hate, i never thought that one day i would actually feel something different from the feelings i had. Loving Theresa was not my intention but then again evil or good we do not choose who to love even if we do, the heart will always deceive us because it sees beyond imperfection that's why we blind to the wrongs of that we love.....

I got home and i rushed my way in i didn't even lock my car, i just wanted to get to her a lot is happening and i don't want her feeling like she's alone i want her to have me by her side. Sterling and the kids were gathered in the guest room that she was meant to be occupying during her stay here, i pushed everyone out of my way i just wanted to get to her...

She was shivering and sweating, more than one blanket covered her but it seems as if like the blankets weren't doing justice she was cold but sweating at the same time i didn't understand what was going on....

The first time thing i did was to take off my jacket and wrapped it around her, if she could smell a scent of someone that she's familiar with, someone that she loves it might help calm her down..

Me: Sterling what happened?

Sterling: we came home and found on the stairs unconscious

Her eyeballs were rolling to the back of her head only the white part showed, i looked at the kids Zerra was hiding behind CJ she looked scared..

Me: take the kids away maybe to the mall

CJ: I am not leaving my sister!

I looked at him and he looked like he was breaking, his eyes were moist. He made his way to us and held Theresa's hand..

Me: You have to go

CJ: No i am not leaving my Sister.. What's happening to her?

A tear fell from his eye...

Me: CJ

CJ: No i want my sister back!

I put my hand on his shoulder and shook him a bit..

Me: Hey!! You trust me don't you?

He looked at me with eyes full of tears..

Me: You trust me don't you?

He nodded while wiping his tears..

Me: go to the mall take Zerra away she doesn't have to see her sister like this, she's too young

Theresa: Fa... Fai.. Faith..

Me: take Zerra and go, i promise you i will get help for your Sister okay? Trust me! She means a lot to me too

He got up..

CJ: Let's go Zerra

He held her Sister's hand and they walked out..

I signaled to Sterling that he should come to me and he did..

Me: don't bring them home until i call you and tell you too

Him: I understand

Me: don't worry about how much you spend on them i will pay you

Him: i know you will

Me: Thank you Sterling you are a good friend

Him: Good luck

He looked at Theresa and then walked out..

She was still shivering and sweating..

Theresa: No!!! No!!! Ahhh!!!

I looked at her hands and the bandages were red with blood..

Theresa: No....Please stop

Seeing her in soo much pain hurt me, she's just a normal girl she doesn't deserve this i knew falling for her would bring about such detrimental effects i didn't want to put her in such a difficult position..

I put my hand on her forehead my vision was blurry tears filled my eyes, i have never cried for anyone before.. I am Calvin Barca i don't have emotions that would make me cry..

Me: Shhhhhhhh.. It's me Toots.. You safe

Theresa: No....

Me: it's me you are safe

I leaned closer to her my tears fell on her face, i kissed her on her cheek..

She seemed to be calming down but she still had fever....

I ran my hand on her sweating forehead I went on to gently grab her hair..

Me: It is not fair! Isn't love pure? doesn't it have to oversee any wrongs? When two hearts love each other can't they be? Love is not supposed to hurt like this, this is not the true nature of love. I am not an expert on it but all i know Love is an opposite of what i am

Advertisement

it's supposed to be good but here it is hurting two hearts that strongly feel something for each other

I stood up and went to the bathroom i saw the broken mirror, something big might have happened here..

The devil appeared.

Him: we must get rid of the witch

Me: No!!!..

Him: Calvin you are the evil she cannot be and she is the good that you cannot achieve, stop forcing what cannot be. Good and evil has never and will never exist along side together

I couldn't stop my tears..

Me: i love her why can't we just be?

Him: If you and her force this relationship this "Love" heaven and hell will always fight you will never be happy either your life and hers will forever be in danger

Me: we will give it all up heaven and earth, we will believe in neither but the love we have for each other

Him: it's not meant to be like that Calvin your destiny is something that you cannot run away from. You chose riches over being a human, you chose money and power over love. I own your heart, i own your soul

Me: i didn't think that i would one day meet someone like her

Him: you have never shed a tear for anyone even when your brother died whom you held dear to your heart you were hurt but you never cried, instead you channeled those feelings into hate and anger. Face the truth Calvin she can be your destiny, she can be your saving grace, and she can also be your doom. You can also be that to her..

I held on to the bathroom counter i was hurt i felt like my heart had been ripped off from my chest...

Me: if i let her go will all of this go?

Him: i believe so don't forget Calvin this house is filled with evil you have brought her where she doesn't belong and her kind will intervene to save her

I wiped my tears..

Me: how do i save her from all of this?

Him: you must call your baby Mama she will give you the answer

Me: how?

Him: Wendy is the daughter of Nimueh she will give you the answer you seek

I took out my phone and went back to the bedroom, i looked at her and she wasn't shivering anymore but sleeping peacefully..

I called Wendy.. Didn't take her long to answer.

Her: It's about time you called

Me: how is Claire?

Her: Claire misses her Father who doesn't call

Me: i know i have been busy

I try to stay away from my Daughter because i don't want to put her life in danger..

Me: how is she?

Her: she is fine she is doing very well prayer helped her

Me: Prayer from your Mother?

Her: Calvin i know how you feel about her but she has an impact on Claire a good one. Claire was complaining about headaches, dizziness, but when Mom prayed for her she woke up the following morning full of life

Me: I see

Her: My Mom is powerful Calvin i know you don't believe but she is...

I looked at Theresa and remembered something..

"Theresa cannot know that her and Nimueh share the same voice"

Wendy: Cal are you still there?

Me: Can i call you back?

Wendy: don't you wanna say hi to Claire?

Me: i will later

Wendy: Come on it won't take long

Me: Wendy not now please

Wendy: i guess later then

Me: Yes later

I hunged up and dropped the phone, the devil came..

Him: are you ready?

Me: i am

He possessed me by getting inside my body..

I knelt down in the middle of the room..

Me: Nimueh Amore ematen dut!! (Nimueh i surrender)

After saying that, Lucifer de-attached himself from me..

Him: i cannot be here when Nimueh comes i only helped you to summon her since i was an Angel myself once and know how they communicate

He disappeared..

After a few seconds i saw a bright light in my room and Nimueh appeared in her Angelic form..

Nimueh: eskubidea gauza Calvin egin duzu (you did the right thing Calvin)

I was beyond hurt, i am going to lose her probably forever...

Me: Can't heaven and hell find a way to make us be together?

Nimueh: Ona eta gaizkia ezin da inoiz existitzen albo elkarrekin alboko(good and evil can never exist side to side)

She went up to her as my tears fell..

Me: No please don't take her away

She picked her up..

Me: Please no

i got up and tried to stop her..

Nimueh: geldiarazteko!! (restrain)

She sent me flying across the room..

I watched her disappear with her, i watch her take her away from me..

Me: Nooooo!!!

I felt coldness in my heart, i took off my shirt and the hearts had separated. Red was on its own and so was the black one, the hearts have separated.

26

CALVIN

1 MONTH LATER

Saturday afternoon around 15:00 just finished speaking at the symposium were many General Practitioners and Specialists who have their own private practices gathered to learn more about my drug and hopefully decide to do business with my company. Barca Pharmaceuticals have been doing very well lately, we having more and more Practitioners wanting us to supply them with the drug. I don't like going into business with Government hospitals it might pose a great risk of my drug's true nature being covered..

Me: And that ladies & gentlemen is the reason why you should go with my Opioid drug

Everyone gave me a standing ovation..

Me: if there's anyone who is interested please go at the back to that table and talk to my assistant.. Thank you very much to everyone who responded to our invitation by coming today

They clapped their hands as i got off stage to the table at the back, others gave me handshakes as I passed them..

Assistant: We made it again

Me: By the look of things you might get a raise again

She smiled..

Me: how many Doctors do you think we going to sign?

Her: From your speech a lot

Me: that's good

She put her hand on my shoulder..

Her: What's wrong? Thought you would be more happy

Me: i am, believe me.

Her: doesn't seem that way

Me: Just that i wonder if this is all the is to life

Her: i don't understand

Me: i don't know if money can give one complete happiness

She laughed..

Her: Where does that come from now? I mean you Calvin Barca
money has always made people throw themselves at your feet

Me: maybe that's the problem

Her: Cal what is wrong?

Me: i..

I heard a voice disturbing us..

Voice: Good afternoon Mr Barca

Me: Dr....

Her: Dr Beverly

Me: i always remember your face but not much with your surname

She chuckled..

Her: It's fine i am not offended

Me: how did you find everything?

Her: great speech by the way i like how your opiod has low Tolerance and independence compared to morphine

Me: That's true it's more safer to use than Morphine

Her: you know what i might just consider having it in my practice

Me: you should..

I saw Sterling and CJ making their way to us..

Me: would you mind if my assistant take you through everything? I just saw a friend

Her: Not at all

I made my way to them..

Sterling: how did it go?

Me: went great i suppose

I looked at CJ..

Me: looks like someone has made the team

CJ: Yes because someone pulled in favours

Me: not me

CJ: don't know about that

Me: thank you for bringing him back Sterling

Sterling: anytime.. I will see you guys around

Me: Bye

CJ: thank you for pulling in favours to get me into the team

Me: when i heard that Rugby is your favourite sport thought it would mean a lot to you if you made in the team

Him: Yeah that's true

Me: Everything alright?

Him: i don't know Theresa has always been here for such achievements to celebrate with me now that she's not here..

That day when Nimueh came and took Theresa away that was the last i saw of Theresa, never heard from her again i don't even know where she is. Since the kids saw her sick that day i lied to them that she is at the hospital but one that is far away

from us were she will get the help she needs and then come back home soon...I won't lie i miss her a lot i never thought that it would be this difficult having to be separated from someone that you hold dear to your heart, reason why things are going good for me in my business is because she no longer poses as a threat. My devotion to the dark world has once more being restored,and the fruits of my devotion are showing..

.

.

THERESA

Everything wasn't adding up, everything was a mess. One day i just woke up in this church i don't even know how i got here, i don't know when i got here, and i don't know why i was here. I kept on asking where i was, why ain't i with my Siblings? Calvin? No one has told me what's going on the Nuns have subjected me to praying everyday. I was tired of praying to a God that i don't even believe in, communication with the outside world was cut. They don't have phones, the church was in a very secret place i doubt anyone knows about it...

It was raining and i was sitting by the window in my room just looking at the rain drops going down my window, each drop went down with a tear. I have failed my Siblings i wonder

where they are, i wonder if they adopted by a rich family or one that is going to abuse them. They must be scared

Advertisement

they probably asking a lot of questions, Lord they must be calling out for me everyday asking why i abandoned them. I failed them, i failed my Mother...

Someone knocked and i wiped my tears...

Me: Come in

The door opened Sister Alice walked in with a tray of food. Sister Alice is the Nun in charge of all the Nuns..

Her: i hope that today you have appetite

She put the tray on top of the small table..

Her: Theresa i know that you don't understand what's going on
She came and sat down on the bed..

Her: if you can just..

Me: Just what?? What kind of church holds someone hostage!
You keeping me away from my Siblings and the man that i love!

Her: No Dear please that's not what we stand for we are not holding you hostage

Me: if not then let me go home, back to my home. To my life!!

Father Luther walked in..

Him: It's alright Sister Alice i will take it from here

She stood up and smiled then walked away...

Father Luther came and sat down, funny how this is going to be the first time that me and him are going to talk, we have never said anything to each other ever since...

Me: Is this what your church stands for?

Him: Stand for?

Me: kidnapping?

Him: we did not kidnap you

I looked at him..

Me: you keeping me away from my family!!! And the man that i love isn't that kidnapping?

Him: we not trying to keep you away from your family

Me: then what are you doing? Why can't i go back home to my life?

Him: Theresa you don't understand what you up against. Nimueh is the one who brought you here when you were unconscious, we are supposed to help you understand your journey so you can go back and face the devil in Calvin boldly

Me: Calvin is not the devil!

Him: i didn't say he was i said the devil that resides in him you ought to stand strong in fighting him, you cannot do this without our help and guidance. You need spiritual elders to help you in this fight

Me: i don't need this shit!!!

Him: watch your tongue child you still in the house of the Lord

Me: Calvin and i we did nothing wrong, we just in love! Isn't love supposed to be a good thing?

Him: It is a good thing, love is pure and that's how it's supposed to be, unfortunately we cannot say the same with the devil. We afraid that the devil in him might consume you especially since you not strong in faith

Me: Calvin doesn't have the devil

Him: Calvin sold his soul to the devil long time ago, that is why he is so powerful and rich

Me: shouldn't i be the one to make that decision? Whether i should be with him or not?

Him: Calvin is dangerous to you at this state Theresa

Me: The only people who appear dangerous to me right now is all of you

Him: i know that you are overwhelmed by everything just allow us to explain everything

Me: explain that supposedly i have been chosen to help Calvin? Chosen by God?

Him: Yes

Me: The same God that let my Mother died? The same God that couldn't help me maintain my siblings? The same God who allowed me to be used by Men to a point were i contracted hiv? Are we talking about that same God?

Him: Theresa there's things in life that happen, things that are beyond our human understanding. Things that only God understands

Me: if we talking about the same God then i don't want anything to do with him

Him: you making the biggest mistake Theresa our church St Luther ministries we help people like you

Me: i don't need help

Him: if you want to go then you are welcome to leave we cannot hold you against your will. If you ever want help our door will always be open for you i will call Nimueh and let her know about your decision

Me: you do that

I cannot stay here and chase ghosts, i need to be at home with my Family..

.

.

CALVIN

Zerra and Claire they clicked from the very first day that they met, Zerra visits them a lot and Wendy is very fond of her too..

CJ and i went to fetch her from Wendy's house..

Me: Wendy thank you very much for helping with Zerra

Wendy: i don't mind Zerra is a wonderful girl and Claire likes her a lot

Me: to be honest i have never seen her this much happy and laid back

Wendy: she has changed from the first day i met her she's no longer that frightened girl

Me: Ya she has

She walked me to my car..

Her: I am surprised and impressed at the same time what you doing for these kids it's admirable

Me: i have grown close to them

Her: i see.. You still haven't told me who they are and how you got them

Me: long story

Her: won't ask further then

Me: would you like to go out sometime?

Her: Calvin Barca are you asking me out on a date?

Me: whatever you wanna call it

She laughed..

Her: i thought that old flame burned out long time ago

Me: well then what do you say?

Her: i would like that a lot

Me: ill check when im not busy

Her: ill wait

We looked at each other..

Her: the kids are waiting

Me: ill see you around

Her: see you around Barca

I made my way to the car..

27

(18 S)

THERESA

My siblings mean a lot to me, they more important than God and life itself. If I cannot be with them then i don't see the reason for me to live. On the other hand Calvin has always been on my mind, he was the only thing that I thought about too while I was here. I have been in denial but the honest truth is that i love him and I want to be with him. Father Luther asked someone to drive me back home, the cars that the church uses were still from the olden days.

Luther: Theresa i must say that you are making a very big mistake you shouldn't go back to Calvin while you are still weak in faith he will devour you

Me: Father Luther thank you for allowing me to stay here and thank you for letting the Sisters take care of me

Him: Faith is going to be very disappointed she has been looking forward to meeting you

Me: Faith? I have heard that name before

Him: Faith is a special child with special abilities, just like you she once experienced stigmata and when confusion clouded

her head she was brought here to seek answers. Today she is doing well, accepted her gift and dedicated her life to the Lord
I chuckled..

Me: Father Luther what's happening here is wrong very wrong, these women are supposed to be out in the world living their lives and not stuck here everyday praying, there's more to life than that

Him: you wouldn't know because you didn't give God a chance

Me: trust me im fine

Him: just remember one thing

Me: Yes?

Him: we cannot protect you when you are in his territory

Me: Calvin loves me he would never hurt me

Him: Calvin yes he might not but Calvin is not alone what do you say about the snake bite?

I put my hand on that area, it has healed but the mark is still there..

Him: be careful Theresa

Me: Thank you

I got inside the car and drove away. I was excited and scared at the same time, i was scared that my Siblings might be living somewhere else and maybe i won't be able to see them again. I was excited about seeing Calvin again just had mixed emotions..

As i directed the driver to Calvin's place the weather started changing. It has always been cloudy but now the clouds were turning a bit black indicating a heavy rain, lighting flashed through..

Me: looks like it's going to rain cats and dogs

Driver: looks like that Mam'

Me: i don't understand the weather was fine i even thought the clouds would clear

Driver: It changed so drastically

Me: you going to have a problem going back

Driver: don't worry about me Mam' i have driven in worst weathers

Me: good for you Pal

Driver: i don't mean to speak out of turn Mam' but...

Me: but?

Driver: i overhead you talking to Father Luther

Me: Yes?

Driver: It seems like you don't believe in the almighty God?

Me: That's right

Driver: If i may ask why?

Me: It's just a lot of things i don't think God likes me and i don't like him too

Driver: If it will make you feel better Forgiveness is a better remedy to heal past pains why don't you try and forgive him to be rid of yourself from all the pain and anger?

Me: you saying i should forgive God?

Driver: Forgive him for whatever that turned you against him that made you hate him because you think it's his fault

Me: never really looked at it that way

Him: whenever bad happens everyone blames God forgetting that No evil resides in him he is perfect in every way hence the Bible says "every good and perfect gift comes from above"

Me: well he allows bad things to happen to good people

Driver: holding on to anger only eats you deep inside until you have nothing left it's an emotion that the devil uses to entrance himself in one's heart

Me: thank you umm...

Driver: Gavreel.. My Name is Gavreel

Me: Thank you Gavreel Such a unique name

Him: It is

Me: what does it mean?

Him: Angel of Peace

Me: Wow your parents must've been real Christians to name you that, i wouldn't think of such a name

Him: and we are here..

Me: you can drop me off at the gate

Him: i am sorry Mam' but unfortunately my journey ends here i cannot get any closer

It started raining..

Me: Well thank you Gav..

I pat him on the shoulder..

Me: drive safe

Him: thank you

I got out of the car..

Him: be safe Mam' and be careful

Me: i will

I watched him drove away as the rain had no mercy it was raining hard now, i looked at my hand and I had a white long feather.. That was odd, was the same hand i used to pat Gav..

I dropped the feather and ran to the gate with the rain still falling, i pressed the intercom..

I pressed it at least 3 times before the was a response..

Voice: Barca residence wad up?

I know that voice, and i know who would say such words...

Me: CJ?

CJ: Theresa?

I heard Calvin talking at the background..

Him: who is that?

CJ: Theresa

Calvin: Theresa?

He came close..

Me: you guys might wanna open the rain

Calvin: ill open and meet you halfway

The gate opened and i made my way in.. The rain came harder..

Halfway i saw Calvin approaching me, i increased my pace. Lightning was flashing through, the rain was pouring soo hard as to create a flood..

I increased my pace until i got to him, he hugged me. I was so happy to see him, i was also happy to find out that he still has my siblings since CJ answered...

He broke the hug and put his hands on my cheeks..

Him: you are crazy what are you doing here? How did you get here?

Me: the future is not written in stone remember?

He smiled..

Him: Yeah i remember

Me: i love you and i wanna be with you to hell with everything just you and me

Him: Just you and me

He kissed me, we kissed to the merciless rain and lightning like nothing made sense but us and our Love..

Him: We better get inside

We made our way inside the house, we were very wet..

Him: let's get you dry before you see the kids

Me: the kids.. you kept them?

Him: Yes with Carol's help i managed to keep them

That was a relief..

Me: i was soo scared i thought that they would be adopted by..

Him: i knew how much they meant to you i fought to keep them

Me: Thank you

I expected Calvin to be very happy when he saw me, he was a bit happy but not completely happy..

Me: you are happy that i am here right?

Him: Of course i am happy just shocked didn't think that you would come back

Me: well i am here and we can start over forget about the craziness that has happened before

Him: that's good

he kissed me on my forehead..

Him: let's get you dry i won't forgive myself if you catch a cold

We walked upstairs to his bedroom and he got me a few towels..

Him: want me to go out while you change?

Me: No it's fine you can just close your eyes

Him: i do hope that i will close my eyes

I dried my hair first that was dripping wet..

Me: what happened since I've been gone?

Him: a lot has happened

Me: i hope good things only

Him: only good things.. And you where have you been?

Me: i was at a church, St Luther Ministries

Him: Father Luther's Church?

Me: You know him?

Him: Very well

Me: how did i end up there?

Him: i don't know

i looked at him...

Him: can that be contributed to starting over?

Me: Calvin if i didn't come back were you going to come looking for me?

Him: i...

Me: you??

Him: i don't know

Me: so you don't wanna be with me?

Him: i do wanna be with you, you the only thing that was always on my mind. Even if i did look for you, a church would be the last thing on my mind to look for you

I chuckled..

Him: well loving me won't be that easy

Me: i know that already

Him: i am serious Resa, i want to know that when the going gets tough you will still be here

Me: i am not going anywhere

He came closer to me and kissed me...

Being in the presence of the one you love i cannot begin to tell you how it feels

but it's a feeling that I am hoping it will last forever...

He took off my tshirt, ran his hands around my body squeezing me tight here and there. I was possessed by his sexual charm, the way he knew how to handle my body...

We found ourselves half naked after a while, breathing heavily, hungry for each other. I wanted him and he wanted me too..

He ran his hand on my hair and grabbed it tightly while starring deep in my eyes, then my lips and the spiral began again...

He still had his Jean on i was only left with my lace underwear and bra...

He picked me up and then we went to the bed, made me sit on top of him he was already hard and couldn't wait to find himself inside of me..

For the first time in my life i wasn't having sex with a random guy, but i was making love to someone who has a hold on my heart. When things got steamy, i helped him remove his jeans..

Me: do you have condoms?

Him: do we need that?

He kissed my cleavage..

Me: Yes we do

Him: you just gonna bring that up now?

Me: You have had sex with call girls i am sure you have condoms around

Him: i do but maybe i just don't wanna use them with you because you not a call girl

Me: Calvin Please

Him: Why? What's the matter?

Me: i just don't want a baby i can barely take care of my Siblings a baby is going to be another stress for me

Me: Yeah but you not going to have a baby with a random guy who won't be able to take of you and the baby

I gave him a serious look..

He held my waist and shook me a little..

Him: is that the only reason?

I couldn't look him in the eye and lie sometimes it's difficult to lie to the person that you love, but in this situation i have no choice. I am not ready to tell him about my status..

Me: that's the only reason

Him: Okay you can just check in that drawer

I got off him and went to check in the drawer, i found a pack of durex..

Me: here we go no unwanted pregnancy

I went to him and we picked up from were we left off.. Later on I helped him put on the condom, and then he helped me slide my way down on him by holding my waist.....

Him: it's not painful?

Me: i am fine

It was a bit painful but after he was fully in it was a bit better..

I Started off slow, i was balancing myself on his shoulders as I went up and down, he was sucking my breasts and caressing my body turning me on more and more...

I never thought that i could engage in sexual intercourse and actually enjoy it, my body was accepting him making me reach an orgasm after another moaning and going crazy out of my mind...

After a few minutes he got me off him and laid me on the bed, i opened my legs wide to give him more room...he kissed my body all over, running his tongue around my belly button and his hand just rubbing me vigorously...

Me: Ohhhhhhh Calvin

I felt myself getting more wet, my toes were curling as he went down and his tongue started dancing around my cookie, my body was tensing up i was pulling his hair..

Me: i think i am going to come

He made his way up and kissed me, making me to taste my juices while he slid his hard shaft in.. He just went for it pumping me hard i couldn't even hold back my screams. He grabbed on tightly to my hair as he increased the pace.....

Him: Fuck!!!!!!

I have never been fucked out of my mind like this, not by Mpho or the other Men i have been with....

I came before him and after having my last orgasm i was a bit drained And he just collapsed ontop of me after shooting his load i was silently praying that the condom didn't break.....

I ran my hand on his soft hair...

Before we could say anything we heard a knock at the door...

Voice: Daddy!!!!

Me: who is that?

Him: that's my little brat

he got off me, and took out the condom thank goodness it didn't break..

Him: Daddy is coming Princess

I made my way to the bathroom to wrap my naked body with a towel and i noticed something weird as i looked at the mirror....

I had red bruises all over my body and bite marks, i touched them and they were a bit painful..

This doesn't make sense, Calvin wasn't violent he handled me with care throughout except for occasionally pulling my hair..

Calvin: Toots??

Me: Coming

i wrapped the towel around my body and made my way to the main room..

He was buttoning his shirt..

Him: are you fine?

Me: Yes

I didn't feel good at all, i felt a bit dizzy and my body was aching..

He went and opened the door...

Him: Hey what's wrong?

He picked her up..

Her: Im not feeling good Daddy

She laid her head on his shoulder..

I went and sat down on the bed..

He brushed her on her back..

Him: What's wrong?

Her: Zerra dared me to drink tomato sauce, and other sauces my tummy is painful

Him: you want Daddy to take you to the Dr?

She nodded...

He turned around..

Him: i want you to meet someone Princess

He tried putting her down but she didn't want..

Him: Claire

Her: No...

Him: Claire stop it..

Her: I don't wanna meet her

Him: Stop it Young Lady or you will be in big trouble

Me: It's fine

Him: she's not always like this i promise you

Me: It's okay i understand

Him: let Daddy get his car keys then

He tried putting her down again but she didn't want..

Her: Tell her to go this is not her home

Him: Stop acting like a brat!

Me: ill go and bath then check up on Zerra and CJ

Him: and ill take this one to the Dr

I stood up and passed them, he pulled me with his other hand and kissed me...

He whispered in my ear..

Him: let's see how she feels about that

I laughed and went to the bedroom that i was occupying before i went missing for a month. I closed the door and dropped the towel on the floor, the bruises were getting worse they were even on my breasts now...

Me: what's happening?

THERESA

I thought that bathing would help ease the pain, the dizziness has faded but the bruises got worse and more painful. It's like someone was kicking me in fragile parts of my body with a construction boot that's how much i was in pain, and not forgetting the unusual bite marks..

It took me a few minutes to get dressed, i put on a long sleeve tshirt so that the kids don't get to see the bruises. All of this doesn't make sense, if it was rough sex which wasn't my Vagina should be burning beyond but it wasn't burning that much, and taking a long relaxing warm bath helped in that area but it didn't help with the bruises in my body..

I slowly walked to look for Zerra and CJ i heard sounds coming from downstairs more like an action movie was playing on Tv, can't really ignore the sound of guns especially if the volume is on full blast. Going down the stairs was harder than i had anticipated and since the living room was open with no wall surrounding it, as i was going down the stairs i noticed it was CJ who was making all the noise with those play station games...

Me: CJ

I couldn't go down any further..

Me: CJ!! (shouting)

He paused and looked at me..

Me: i need a helping hand

He got up from the couch and came to me..

Him: are you okay?

Me: im just in pain

Him: Here let me help

He put my arm around his shoulders..

Me: Easy..

He put his other hand around my waist...

Me: CJ not soo tight!

Him: I am sorry

We slowly walked down the stairs but with CJ being not soo gentle he was inflicting more pain on my already aching body..

Him: Just a few more steps

Me: i don't think i can

Him: should we go upstairs?

It's a long way..

Him: then you have to be strong

I nodded..

We continued with our journey it was a painful one but i took it all in until we finally got down the stairs, he helped me to sit on the couch..

I was breathing heavily..

Me: Thank you Pumpkin

He stood there and looked at me..

Me: not the kind of welcome i was hoping for

He didn't respond just gave me a serious face..

Me: i know you mad pumpkin that i left but..

CJ: who did this to you?

Me: what?

CJ: The bruises who did this to you?

Me: what bruises?

CJ: You light skinned Theresa you have a red bruise around your eye, a bruise next to your lower lip your neck says a lot too. You have bruises that make up can't even hide

He came to me and lifted my tshirt up..

Me: Stop it!

Him: look at you who did this to you?

Me: CJ..

Him: Is it Calvin?

Me: What? No?

Him: you disappear for a full month no explanation and you randomly come back with bruises

Me: Baby Calvin would never do this to me

Him: i have been investigating him and he doesn't have a good reputation with women, i heard that rich men tend to abuse their partners is he beating you up?

Me: that's ridiculous

CJ: then where have you been? Are we living this good life at the expense of your own life?

Me: CJ!!!! That's enough!

He took his phone from the table..

Me: what are you doing?

Him: i am calling the police

Me: CJ put the phone down

Him: i have never seen you like this Theresa

Me: give me the phone

Him: No

Me: CJ give me the phone

He gave it to me..

I went through it trying to search Calvin's number but i couldn't work this thing out, i was never really good with expensive phones...

Him: what are you looking for?

Me: Calvin's number

Him: allow me please

I gave him the phone..

Me: just tell him to come home i am not feeling well

He called him...

Me: put him on loud speaker

He looked at me..

CJ: shut up would you now?

Me: excuse me?

CJ: Calvin it's me... You better get home man, i know what you did and my Sister is in a lot of pain. Get the fuck home now!!!

He hung up..

I didn't say anything i looked at him..

Him: a month ago when you left Sterling and i came home that day with Zerra, we found you unconscious on the floor. We called Calvin he came home and sent us away, told Sterling to take us somewhere. We later on came back home and you were not around, Calvin said you were at the hospital but we never visited you

Me: Pumpkin

CJ: From there on Calvin treated us differently

Advertisement

everything i wanted i got he even shifted me from the public school into a private one though i was taken back to grade 8 again but it's one of the best private schools, he got me into the rugby team he managed to adopt me and Zerra all that in a space of one month do you see what's wrong with the picture?

Me: Your investigation tells you it's wrong?

CJ: it's not normal Theresa! Calvin gets everything he wants without a sweat he is just a human being he is not God, now i know why the special treatment because he has been abusing you and trying to blind us by giving me and Zerra everything that we want!

Me: CJ!! What is wrong with you? You are starting to get way too smart for your own age you only 15

Him: So i am right?

Me: You are wrong

Him: are you protecting him?

Me: No

Him: victims of abuse protect their spouses

Me: Spouses? Calvin and I we not married! And stop talking like that

Him: let's just go home Pumpkin all of this is not worth it if it means you have to pay with your life. Calvin is going to kill you

Something wasn't right with my Brother, CJ has never spoken like this is not him.....

.

.

CALVIN

"Calvin it's me... You better get home man, i know what you did and my Sister is in a lot of pain. Get the fuck home now!!!"

I have been listening to this voicemail over and over again, something is not right CJ would never talk to me in this manner, let alone to order me around..

I got out of the rest room and made my way back to Dr Cele's office..

Me: How is she?

Her: she will be fine

Dr Cele is Claire's pediatrician..

Me: Can i leave them here Wendy will come and pick them up

Dr Cele: i don't mind

I looked at Claire and she looked like she was about to cry..

Me: I'll call Mommy she will come and pick you up

She shook her head no..

Me: Claire not now i am not in a good mood

She started crying..

Me: what's wrong with you today? You have been very clingy

Dr Cele: Claire is very fond of you

Me: Zerra attend to her

I looked at Dr Cele..

Me: Please call her Mom to come and pick them up

Dr Cele: I will

I walked to the door..

Claire: Daddy!!! (Crying)

I can be in any mood but my Daughter's cry tears deep inside deeper than were the devil resides..

I turned and looked at Dr Cele..

Me: Can't you sedate her or something? Kind of hard seeing her crying

Dr Cele: i have already given her a Panado it will knock her out

Me: Zerra attend to your little sister

Zerra put her hand on Claire's back..

Zerra: Shhhhhhhhh

I walked out with her still crying like that.. I was mad i don't know where CJ gets off talking to me like that...

I got inside the car and looked at myself in the rear view mirror, everytime when the devil has taken over my pupils would change..

I started the car and drove home..

.

.

THERESA

CJ and i we were playing games now, he was a bit calm and teaching me how to play this Playstation 4..

Him: Fifa is definitely not for you

Me: i couldn't even get the ball.. That one that you were playing when i was coming down the stairs what is it?

Him: Call of duty.. Wanna play it?

Me: sounds violent all the guns going off

Him: it's quite a dope game

Me: what does dope mean?

Him: Really Theresa?

Me: what? I don't know the language

Him: it means it's a good game

Me: let's play it then

Him: cool

Me: and CJ

Him: Yeah?

Me: i know that you trying to be protective but Calvin is not a bad guy

He looked down..

Me: has he ever given you any reason not to trust him?

Him: all i know is that you didn't bruise yourself

Me: Pumpkin Calvin is not a woman beater

Him: he has lost his temper a few times

Me: he loves me very much and he would never hurt me
Pumpkin, you have to trust him

We heard a car pulling up..

Me: that must be him

Him: it's about time!

Me: CJ address him with respect he is still your elder

CJ: i don't give a fuck! What respect does he deserve if he can't respect you?

Me: He does respect me!

CJ: so says the bruises on your body

The kitchen door opened and i was expecting a more gentle approach in closing the door but i had the door being banged, my heart jumped a little..

CJ: See what i mean?

Calvin: Theresa!!! (shouting)

CJ: he is a good guy alright

Calvin walked in judging from his facial expression he was fuming..

CJ stood up..

Calvin threw his keys on the coffee table..

Calvin: tell me boy where do you get off telling me what to do?

CJ: and where do you get off beating my Sister?

Calvin: What?

CJ: look at her

Me: CJ calm down

Calvin: i did not beat your sister! Even if i did off which i didn't, my relationship with your sister doesn't convey you!

CJ: so what she beat herself is that what you saying?

I slowly got up from the couch..

Me: Guys please

Calvin: do not accuse me of something i didn't do!!!

CJ: then explain her bruises!! (yelling)

Me: CJ!!! That's enough

CJ: we still yet to call the cops Pumpkin it's not enough

Calvin looked at him, and then chuckled.. He ran his hand on his hair..

Calvin: Okay you know what

He took out his cellphone..

Him: you can use my phone

CJ took his cellphone..

Calvin: 10111 incase you have forgotten the number

CJ started dialing..

Calvin: Wait

CJ: you ready to confess?

Calvin: if i go to jail then let me go to jail for something that i have done!

We looked at him..

Calvin: it will take the cops probably 10min to get here and it will only take me 3min to beat the shit out of her!!!

He made his way to me..

Calvin: you have two choices CJ you call the cops while i beat the shit out of her, or you come and interfere then i kill both of you

When he turned and looked at me he wasn't Calvin, something was wrong. His eyes were very wrong and his tongue kept on protruding from his lips like that of a snake, whatever this was it wasn't my Calvin this is the devil that Nimueh(Mrs Bhengu) has been warning me about. I saw the coldness in his heart reflecting through his eyes, My Calvin was gone at that moment and I must've came face to face with the serpent...

29

THERESA

That was not Calvin approaching me, Calvin would never hurt me or would he? The snake tongue changed to a normal human tongue but his pupils remained the same, They weren't scary or creepy just different one would swear that he had on eye contacts.

CJ: Now i am definitely calling the Police!

Calvin turned and approached him..

Calvin: You have done irritating me today boy!

He put his hand on CJ's throat and then lifted him up to the air, i didn't even know that he possesses that much strength to lift someone up in the air with just one hand..

Me: Calvin please don't hurt him, he is just a boy!

He threw him across the room and CJ landed on the stairs, i could swear that i had his skull cracking.

Me: CJ!!!!

I tried moving from were i was standing to him but Calvin turned and raised his hand at me i couldn't move, my feet felt stuck and frozen to the floor.

Him: Let's have a sit.. shall we?

He transferred a force from his hand that came as a blast of wind and knocked me straight to the couch, with my already aching body falling on the couch like that inflicted more pain..

Me: Ahhhhhh!!! (screaming)

He walked up to me..

Him: Pain! That's what i also feed on

Me: What do you want from me?

I said that still in unbearable pain, He sat me up straight.

Me: What did you do to Calvin?

He brushed my hair back..

Him: I am Calvin Toots

Me: Liar!!

I spat on his face. He wiped the spit and then slapped me hard across the face...

Him: Unlike Calvin i am not soo much gentle, i am superior and i will not be disrespected by a woman!

I kept quiet..

Him: dammit Theresa!!! Can't you see how beautiful your life can be? You can be my Queen! i am the king of this world and i can give you anything that your heart desires

He walked over to the small table to pour a glass of whiskey..

Him: You don't know how much you stand to gain if you give your heart to me

I slowly got up from the couch and walked to the table to get the cell phone, i was careful as to not make a sound.

Him: All you have to do is to serve me faithfully, love me, help me capture more souls for my kingdom, Our kingdom.

I picked up the phone and worked my way around it all i wanted to do was call the cops, i don't have to tell what's going on but all i have to do is let them hear the conversation and probably pick up that I am in danger.

Him: Put the phone down Toots

How did he know? I made no sound and it's a touch screen no sound was made, if there was a sound it was supposed to be overshadowed by him talking..

He turned around and i dropped the phone on the floor..

Him: I am a serpent. Poor eyesight, i sometimes depend on sensation no matter how silent you can try to be but you cannot be silent enough for me to not notice your movement..

I know that to fight evil you use good, several times when my Mother used to pray he would call upon the name of Jesus to

do away with any present evil at that time. If i remember correctly the Name of Jesus triumphs all evil..

Me: In the name of Jesus stay away from me!!

He looked at me in total silence..

Did i get him? Did it work?.. He burst into laughter.

Him: what are you doing?

It didn't work

Advertisement

how can it not work?

Him: You cannot use such a powerful word if you don't believe in the one who was named after it or the creator himself rather..

I stood there hoping that help would come soon but then i remembered what Father Luther said "we won't be able to protect you when you are in his territory" those words echoed in my ears..

The more he walked closer and closer to me the more scared i got..

Him: don't worry i have no intentions of hurting you i did that a lot today already

I swallowed..

Him: if you don't want to be mine willingly then you will be forced to be mine

He gulped down the whiskey..

Him: I own full custody of your siblings and any stupid thing that you do, you will never see them again i will send them straight to..

He leaned closer..

Him: Hell

We looked at each other for a while...

Him: It's really your choice even if you run away with them you won't get far you will be caught and you might go to jail for a long time, kidnapping is not a joke.. So im gonna go get a few things and when i get back i hope we would be eating a nice family dinner around the table

He kissed me on my cheek..

Me: What about CJ? He needs help

Him: His life depends on you right now

I looked at CJ laying there and not moving, the pain that he must be going through right now. I cannot lose him, i cannot lose him like this..

I closed my eyes and tears fell, i wish that i could've listened when i was warned but then my love for Calvin clouded my judgment...

Me: Fine.. I will be your Queen

He was about to walk out of the room when i said that..

Him: that was quick

Me: Family means everything to me

He came back to me...

Him: we are going to be perfect just wait and see

He kissed me, gave me the longest kiss ever that made my knees weak as always. He kisses like Calvin, he was gently handling my body like Calvin. But he wasn't Calvin...

Him: Let's get him to the hospital

Me: Thank you

I walked away and he grabbed my arm then pulled me back to him..

He became his snake form..

Him: don't you dare think of betraying me

Me: i will never

He changed back into his normal self...

Him: you take the keys and i will follow you

He gave me the car keys and i limped my way out to the car,
whatever comes by; may i be saved from the hand of this devil..

I unlocked and waited for them, all of this is my fault. My
Brother is in this position because of me..

He approached the car carrying CJ, CJ was still not moving..

Him: think he hurt his head from the fall

He put him at the back....

Me: ill monitor him

Him: i will and you will drive

Me: i don't have my license with me

Him: I thought i told you that i am the king of this world

Me: i am in pain

Him: Just drive woman!

I got into the driver's seat and he got at the back with CJ..

.

.

NIMUEH(MRS BHENGU)

I was at St Luther Ministries I could feel that Theresa is in danger but i can't reach her, my wings are clipped if I just randomly show up without the protection of my family the other warrior Angels since I was kicked out of heaven, The serpent will have me for dinner.

I was standing in the middle of the church starring at the cross when i heard Father Luther speaking behind me..

Luther: Take heart Nimueh

Me: I can sense that she is in danger

Luther: I forgot you and her share the same voice

Me: I have been standing here trying to seek answers how do I help someone who is spiritually lost

He sat down..

Luther: All we have to do is to put faith in Theresa it's all up to her now

Me: Can't we get the Prophet?

Luther: We can get Zaine, he can save her from the serpent but it would be useless if Theresa still doesn't believe. Her and her alone has to open up her heart to God, nothing will work until Theresa accepts her destiny and believe in God

Me: What do I have to do in the meantime?

Luther: Have faith and try to reach out to her going to a bit difficult because you two are not spiritually connected but i wouldn't lose hope on her just as yet

Me: she is a fighter, always has been one

Luther: Her destiny will come forth no one can stand in the way of that happening, not even the devil himself

Me: i wish she can come to realize how strong she is

Luther: She will all in due time but now you can also ask Faith to help maybe she can reach out to her like the last time

Me: Thank you Father Luther, thank you for everything that you doing for us

Luther: bringing down Lucifer won't be easy but it's not impossible he was defeated before he will always be under our feet and beneath us, all we have to do is fight evil with good for we know what his plans are.

30

THERESA

If i lose CJ i will never forgive myself let alone be able to function like a normal person everyday. I was in another ward the Nurse was checking my bruises and the bite marks, Calvin made sure he was present just incase i say something that i am not supposed to say.

Nurse: does it pain when i do this?

I flinched..

Me: a lot

Nurse: Sorry let me call the Dr

She walked out..

Me: How is CJ?

Calvin: The Dr said that they have to do scans to check if there's no hemorrhage in his brain or cerebral aneurysm but from the look of things he might be lucky and recover

I am stuck in a situation that i cannot get out off, i should've known that something was wrong with Calvin the day he bit me on my neck but then my love for him blinded me it blinded me to a point that my Siblings are now suffering from my ignorance..

Calvin: Stop crying

Me: i am a human being and when we hurt our eyes cannot hold back the tears, i am sorry if it irritates you but i can't help it!

Calvin: why did you even come along?

Me: excuse me that's my brother!!

Calvin: do not raise your voice at me or we gonna have a problem Toots

I wiped my tears, this is emotionally draining. My life has been nothing but a curse, i cry the same tears every day. I am only 25 years old and i don't remember a time were i was actually happy.

The Nurse came back with the Dr.

Dr: Good day

We greeted her back.

Dr: I am Dr Bodaline

Me: Theresa.. Theresa Mendoza

She looked at Calvin..

Calvin: you should recognize me

Dr: of cause i do, Mr Calvin Barca everyone knows you

The Dr looked at me.. She put her hand under my chin and turned my head around to check the bruises on my face..

Nurse: they extend to her body

Dr: would you please take off your Tshirt for me?

Me: Yes

Nurse: ill help you

The Nurse helped me take off my tshirt, the bruises weren't red anymore they were now purple..

Dr Bodaline looked at Calvin..

Dr: May i please speak to the patient alone?

Calvin's facial expression changed but then he didn't wanna make a scene so he maintained a fake smile.

Calvin: Yes you may

He came and kissed me on my cheek..

Calvin: Ill go and check on CJ

That was an indirect threat that if i say something off he will kill CJ.

Bodaline also looked at the Nurse..

Her: That goes for you too

She walked out..

Dr: Are you seeing anyone?

I nodded..

Dr: Calvin?

I nodded again..

Dr: Is he the one who did this to you?

Me: No

Dr: Theresa i have had such cases i know domestic abuse when i see one, see how your bruises are? It's an indication that you bleeding internally what did he do? Kick you several times?

Me: My Fiancé did not beat me

Dr: Are you scared of him? Is he threatening you?

Me: Can i go home now?

Dr: i am going to keep you for the night matter of fact i am going to call Detective Sway

Me: No!!!

Dr: then you better start talking

Me: it's a complicated story you won't understand

Dr: make me understand

Me: Just let it go please or else you will be putting your life in danger

Dr: What danger?

Me: Calvin is...

Calvin walked in...

I started wearing my tshirt.

Calvin: ill help you with that

Me: thank you

Calvin: are you done Dr? Can i take my fiancé home?

Dr Bodaline looked at me and i was pleading with her to just let it go, i was pleading with my eyes..

She cleared her throat..

Dr: I still think that i should keep you here overnight to examine your bruises i still think that you might be bleeding internally

Me: All i need is something for the pain and then i will be fine

Dr: Theresa..

Calvin: You heard my Fiancé Dr she will be fine

I faked a smile..

Dr: ill write you a prescription on what you supposed to get from the pharmacy, can i at least see you tomorrow?

I looked at Calvin and he nodded..

Me: tomorrow it is

Dr: i will be right back

She walked out...

Calvin: Internal bleeding she's out of her mind

Me: what if it's true?

Calvin: It's just bruises they will heal

I looked at him and i have no doubt that he was not my Calvin

Advertisement

my Calvin is buried somewhere deep within this person and all i have to do is to awaken him. Awaken his spirit...

.

.

NIMUEH

I didn't know how to save Theresa, i didn't know how to go about with this situation. If i was still a warrior Angel it would've been very easy, i would've went there with my Family and stand face to face with the serpent but unfortunately that's

not the case, i have no powers to stand up to him.. I needed some spiritual advice and i know the person who can give me some good advice, so later on that day i went to see him.

I was escorted to his office..

Me: still work and no play?

He glanced up..

Him: Nimueh

Me: Prophet Radebe

Him: Zaine please

I walked in and sat down..

Me: can you believe this is my first time setting foot here in Purgatory?

Him: i believe you

I looked around..

Me: You have turned this place around you can feel the love all the way from the gate

Him: would you like something to drink?

Me: no thank you

Him: something tells me you here with a serious matter?

Me: i wish i could say otherwise

Him: what seems to be the matter?

Me: one of my charges Theresa Mendoza

Him: Miss Mendoza

Me: i have spoken to Father Luther and he is telling me something that i don't wanna hear i need to save her

Him: you and Theresa share the same voice, she is your fate and you are hers

Me: she is in real danger

Him: im afraid there's nothing we can do

Me: don't tell me that too

Him: i can go there and take her out kicking and screaming but nothing is going to change she will go back to him

Me: what makes him to have a hold on her heart like this?

Him: we talking about someone here who has never been loved, Theresa is seeking love and she is finding it in the wrong place

Me: It's Something that dates back to her Mother she was never shown love as a child

Him: i believe Calvin to be the only person who has ever shown her love but unfortunately with the choices he has made in his life they standing in the way and hurting those that he loves they can never be as long as he is still evil

Me: as we always say when the devil plays a song don't dance to it

Him: Theresa needs to be the one who will walk out on him willingly if we force her out she will still go back

Me: i don't think she will be able to do that

Him: Theresa has this deep buried anger and hate for God and that's the reason Lucifer will be able to dominate and possess her, she is failing to understand that she can save Calvin only if she walks out of his life to accept her destiny and come back strong to stand against him. The devil has taken soo much from her and she doesn't know right now that she is in love with someone who is the reason for her pain

Me: and the devil is lying to her convincing her that God is responsible for her pain

Him: and that's why her heart does not want to let God in

Me: there's something that we can do Zaine

Him: i can go and try to talk to her

Me: i would appreciate that a lot if Theresa goes to the dark side it's over i will not be saved

Him: i am sorry i know how hard this must be for you

Me: i thought that my fate was gonna be decided like Azreal and Angel Phoenix i thought the innocence of the Angels was going to outweigh my sins

Him: Nimueh you killed one of your own, you killed your own Sister one of the warrior Angels to protect a devil worshipper Heaven even showed you mercy by sending you to earth than Purgatory

Me: Viwe was one of the humans on earth that i was supposed to protect from evil i wasn't supposed to let her turn dark she wasn't supposed to be a devil worshipper

Him: and when she did you couldn't accept you still wanted to protect her and you went about it the wrong way

Me: i regret that everyday of my life

Him: but at least now you have a chance to redeem yourself, God is a God of second chances no matter how bad you have sinned you have to redeem yourself with Theresa don't make the same mistake on Theresa that you did with Viwe

Me: I can't do it on my own though i need help

Him: and we will help you, we will get you home

Me: thank you it means a lot to me

Him: Where can I find Theresa? I need to talk to her alone not with the devil in Calvin

Me: i will ask faith to track her down when she's alone... Are you going to talk to her as Prophet Zaine?

Him: You can't talk about God to someone who hates God and right now the holy spirit is not saying anything to me which means it's not something i should be involved in but you family and family looks out for each other

He took off his ring and put it on his right hand

Him: My wife is going to kill me after i let her in on this plan

Me: What's the plan?

Him: Theresa has to leave him willingly so i am going to make her leave him willingly

Me: be careful the last thing we need is Paparazzi saying the Prophet is having an affair

Him: Maybe i should pray about this

Me: i think so too it's a dangerous plan for your image

Him: let's hope the Holy Spirit will have my back on this one

Me: It's for a good cause and i hope the plan works

31

THERESA

We arrived at home from the hospital my body was still aching and all that i wanted to do was to just take a bath, drink my medication and then sleep. Calvin and i we didn't say anything to each other we were so silent in the car that it wasn't even normal, but then again we have drifted apart so bad that we were now complete strangers to each other.....

I was the first one to walk inside the house i made my way straight to the bedroom with him following me..

Him: Toots can we talk?

Even if i didn't wanna talk to him it wouldn't make any difference because he was going to force me either way.

Me: I am tired of fighting with you i just wanna bath and rest

I walked to the bathroom..

Him: I love you i have always loved you even before you knew me

I stopped...

Me: what are you talking about?

Him: i was there when you were growing up you couldn't see me but i witnessed every tear that you shed, i witnessed the

pain and the struggles that you have been through but no matter how much you were put down you always found strength deep inside of you to keep pushing and to keep on fighting

I turned around...

Me: I am confused

Him: Calvin didn't choose to sell his soul to me out of his own will, just like you he was a lost soul I knew that bringing you both together you might console each other and make a perfect couple. I needed him to get to you and make you my queen

I shook my head no..

Him: Calvin and i we are one. This is my world, and with you by my side i can achieve a lot, we can be the most powerful couple. You deserve the best Theresa, you deserve to enjoy life you have cried so many tears it's time for you to enjoy life now

Me: Your love hurts

Him: I agree that i don't have the best temper but that's something we can work on

He came to me and knelt down then held my hand..

Him: I love you, allow me to give you the happiness that you deserve allow me to heal your broken heart. I am powerful
Theresa more than you think

I looked deep into his eyes and they confirmed that he meant every word that he was saying, his eyes were drawing me in. I mean if God is soo good then why is the world so bad? The world is filled with killers, rapists, and so forth. They hurt innocent souls and then walk free the next day to roam the streets around, if God is so good why do we have evil Pastors who mislead the church in his name and then he sits in his throne and does nothing about it? All I see is the world getting more and more consumed by evil and God does nothing to intervene. What's the reason of living a good life when you going to go to hell anyway? I mean aren't you supposed to be perfect to get into heaven? That's everything that came into my mind when i starred deep into Calvin's eyes, he showed me the truth.

I looked at him and smiled..

Him: People are destined for different things, and your destiny is to be my queen

He got up..

Him: I promise you things are going to change from now on

Me: i believe so too

He kissed me the affection was more intense now than how it was with Calvin..

Him: Why don't you bath and then we will go out for dinner maybe go eat at the dash hotel

Me: with all these bruises?

Him: Touch of make up here and there, and then you will wear a long sleeve tshirt

Me: id like that

He kissed me again..

Him: ill call Dash to reserve a table for us

Me: ill go and bath

I took the things that I got at the pharmacy that i am supposed to bath with and i made my way to the bathroom to run me some warm bath...

This might just work, this could be my heaven on earth..

Everyone who has been through the most difficult times deserves happiness at some point of their lives, they deserve to have everything that they lost returned to them..

After the water filled up i went to get a towel and i heard a familiar voice calling out to me..

"Theresa.. "

I turned and looked around the room, i saw no one..

"Theresa don't let the devil in your heart..he is a liar and very manipulative.. He will make sin look Pleasing to you, the more you delight in it the more he prepares the Burning Fierce so he can torment your soul forever"

Me: who are you?

"You are pure Theresa the devil will appear to you in the most perfect form, he is possessing you.. The earthly riches that he tempting you with are nothing compared to what the almighty God has kept for you in heaven.. You are stronger than you give yourself credit for, don't let your heart weaken at the sight of the devil.. We love you Theresa

Advertisement

God loves you and he will never give up on you.. He is patient, he will wait for you but remember you only human and your time is running out don't make him wait forever"

The door opened and Calvin walked in...

Him: are you alright?

I looked at him..

Me: Yes i am.. I am fine

He walked in and closed the door..

Him: are you sure?

I nodded..

Him: let me help you undress

He came and helped me to undress while giving me a weird look....

Me: what is it?

Him: i don't know i feel like you hiding something from me

Me: ill never hide anything from you, besides even if i was hiding something from you i think you would know right?

He slightly smiled..

Him: you right about that i guess im just paranoid i don't want to lose you

Me: i am not going anywhere

Him: do you promise?

Me: i promise

When i was done undressing he walked me to the bathtub and helped me get inside..

He sat at the edge and started sprinkling water on my face..

Me: Stop it you too old for that

Him: i will never stop putting a smile on your face

Me: i am serious stop it (laughing)

He stopped..

Him: Fine then enjoy your bath and don't take long

Me: i won't

Him: i love you

Me: i love you too

He stood up and walked out leaving me with a big smile on my face..

.

.

NIMUEH

Father Luther didn't want to hear nothing about the plan that Zaine and I proposed to him, i can feel it deep inside of me that Theresa was giving in to the devil. She is not meant to take this route, she is not meant to be evil we are running out of time, if we don't act now we might lose her forever...

Luther: Prophet Zaine i respect you, unlike most of us spiritual leaders you were blessed beyond but what you saying to me right now is blasphemy

Zaine was standing by the window with his arms folded..

Zaine: i can feel the darkness that is slowly consuming her we are losing one of our own to the dark world

Luther: Prophet with all due respect..

Zaine: address me as Zaine please i respect you more than you respect me Father

Luther: you are playing with fire you are going to play with a heart that is already torn if she falls for you and then at the end finds out that all of this was to just get her to accept the Lord, she is going to hate God more she will think otherwise of God it will only add up to the hate

Me: we cannot sit back and allow the devil to consume her i cannot lose another charge

Zaine: and i am not going to sit back and watch that happen i can feel if deep inside of me that Theresa is powerful and the only reason that the serpent is manipulating her like this is because he knows that Theresa is the one who is supposed to defeat him so he is intimidated. Look Father Luther i know what she is going through, i myself was once stubborn and wanted nothing to do with God but here i am today. She needs that leap of faith, she needs spiritual guidance why am i a Prophet then if I cannot help lost souls and bring them closer to God? Help them accept their destiny just like i did

Luther: I still say we must think of something else this is too dangerous and I doubt your wife will allow, what did the Holy Spirit say?

Zaine kept quiet..

Luther: We cannot go about about this without the interference of heaven

Me: we don't have time Father Luther we have to act now

Voice: May i be allowed to speak please?

We all looked at the door and Faith walked in..

Faith is a special girl she was blessed with wisdom, she has the power to heal, and she can see events that are yet to happen. She was rescued by Father Luther when she was 10 years old, the village that she lived at with her parents the villagers wanted to stone her to death because they thought she was a witch, they thought she had demons and was working with the devil.. It was very difficult for her at first to accept and embrace such a powerful gift, but Father Luther never gave up on her he helped her through and today she's doing very well she is 14 years old.. Father Luther stood up..

Luther: Please come in

She walked in..

May i please be allowed the platform to speak?

We all looked at each other..

Faith: I have been shown the events that are yet to come and i must say that i fully agree with Nimueh and Prophet Zaine on their plan..

Luther: But child..

Faith: i understand your concerns Father and i must say that sometimes God trusts us fully to make wise decisions, Remember when you saved me? Remember when you brought me here? Wasn't that a decision that you completely made on your own because you believed that it was the right thing to do?

Luther: Yes but that was different

Faith: No Father it is not different, Theresa is another soul that needs saving. If we can't save Theresa then what good are we? God didn't give us the spirit to be timid, No we are courageous, we are fearless, we are warriors, and we have strength that the devil does not possess. If we let one of our own be devoured by the devil then we would've failed the whole of heaven, this is going to be a very big spiritual fight and with no doubt we must win

Father Luther sat down..

Faith: There is no time to waste anymore

We kept quiet for a while..

Zaine: i will go and talk to my wife

Me: i will go to the alter and see if i can connect with the other warrior Angels

Luther: I will pray

Faith: And i will have faith in Theresa after all we all need someone who can believe in us

THERESA

Honestly speaking i wasn't in the mood to go out i just wanted to be indoors and rest, my body was aching, i was tired, and my eyes were painful from all the crying that i have been doing. I spent more than the required time to get ready because i wanted to hide the bruises on my as best as i could. The dinning area of the Bangladesh hotel is classy, dress code strictly black tie for men, and formal for all women you won't be allowed inside if you a woman and not wearing heels and an acceptable dress. The dinning area is most filled with successful people, that's one area that was restricted to us while i was still working there...

I was wearing a skinny Jean, boots, a long sleeve white tshirt and a scarf to hide the bruises on my neck. I wanted to tie my curly hair into a neat bun but i couldn't with the bruise on my face so i was forced to let my hair loose, and worse i am not much into make up. Calvin walked into the room looking classy as always, flashy black suit, hair neatly combed and not much facial hair..

Him: Toots we running late

His cologne filled the room, i looked at him and then i looked at myself walking with him in such a classy place in the presence

of elegant and rich people i feel like i am going to embarrass him. I don't wanna embarrass him in the presence of his high profiled friends and associates, Calvin has never been seen with a low class woman like me not on tv and not in newspapers too..

He noticed that i wasn't okay..

Him: What's wrong?

Me: it's nothing

He came to me with his one hand in his pocket..

Him: Talk to me i hate seeing you sad

He gently picked me up and sat me on the counter, he parted my legs and came in between them.. He put his hand under my chin..

Him: what's wrong?

Me: i don't know Cal, i have never really been out to such an expensive place well i worked there just cleaning after everyone but i never went there as a guest

Him: That's what's bothering you?

Me: look at me, i am not even dressed up for the occasion

Him: and its my Fault that you not dressed up for the occasion, i caused all those bruises

Me: i just don't wanna embarrass you, you are a high profiled person imagine what the papers would write

He rubbed my cheek with his thumb.

Him: i don't care what the papers write i just wanna spend time with you and since i have been a jerk today i really wanted to make it up to you with this dinner. Beautiful girls deserve beautiful things

Me: so says the bruise around my eye

He lifted my chin up and looked at the bruise around my eye..

Him: doesn't look that bad anymore

I forced to look down again..

Me: Calvin why me?

Him: why you?

Me: you could be with any girl you want a girl that is at the same level as you, why me? Why...

He shut me up by kissing me, him being that close to me and his cologne intoxicating me i was lost for words.. I grabbed on tightly to his jacket as we shared that kiss that wet my lips beyond, and made my vagina a bit warm. I don't know what it was about him but he had a hold on my heart.. He broke away from the kiss and then looked at me, i opened my eyes..

Him: let's go

He put me down..

I took my phone and then we walked out to his car..

Him: I think a Bentley would work better tonight

He said that grabbing my left butt cheek..

Me: Stop it

Him: can't resist how sexy you are

Me: i think we should go before we have sex in the parking of your house

Him: our house, parking of our house

We walked to the Bentley.. He unlocked and then we got in..

We drove to the Bangladesh hotel with his one hand on the starring wheel, and his other hand was holding mine..

He would look at me and give me his ever charming slight smile, i don't wanna lie i have never felt such love. Such unconditional love especially from someone who could have anyone but went for me..

.

.

NIMUEH

Zaine invited me and faith to have dinner with his family that night, we were also hoping to run Mrs Rhadebe through the plan after the dinner and pray that she agrees. Faith gave me her word that Mrs Rhadebe would agree to the plan, she is noble and has a big heart.

We had went through the main course, and when we got to the dessert the kids were already full and wanted to go to bed. Blessing being the first born he took the little ones to bed..

I was left with faith, Mrs Rhadebe, and Zaine at the table the moment of truth was here..

Me- Mrs Rhadebe thank you for the dinner it was very delicious

Her: Please call me Bonolo

She stood up..

Her: let me clear the table

Faith: i can help

Bonolo: don't worry yourself dear

Zaine: MaRhadebe i have something to discuss with you

She looked at us..

Bonolo: sounds serious

Zaine: It is

She sat down..

Zaine held her hand..

Zaine: Remember i told you about Nimueh?

Bonolo looked at me..

Her: Yes of cause i still cannot believe that we have an Angel under our roof i am honoured

Me: please i am the one who should be honoured

Bonolo looked at Zaine..

Bonolo: What did you want to talk about?

Zaine: Remember how difficult it was for me to answer to my calling?

Bonolo: I remember

Zaine: There's this girl her name is Theresa and..

Bonolo: and..?

Zaine: Theresa is in love with someone but they cannot be together because he has sold his soul to the devil for riches and power

Me: That sounds serious

Me: It is, see Theresa is someone who has struggled in her life to experience Love. She never got love from her Mother, all the

men that she has been with all they wanted was to just be intimate with her. She has never experienced true love and with Calvin, she has found true love they love each other but unfortunately Theresa is off pure heart and Calvin is consumed by evil. The only way that they can be together is if one jumps ships and Theresa cannot turn evil we share the same voice she is like a Sister to me

Bonolo: i don't even know what to say...wait are we talking about Calvin? Thee Calvin Barca?

Zaine: Yes

Bonolo: Calvin sold his soul to the devil?

Me: Yes

Bonolo: a lot of people look up to him

Me: that's the whole situation

Bonolo: well then I still don't understand

Zaine: Theresa has bitter feelings for God she blames God for her pain, she believes that if God was really good then why did he let her suffer and right now the serpent Calvin is whispering into her ear manipulating her into thinking that her troubles and pain were really caused by God

Bonolo: that is soo sad

Zaine: That's were i come in with my experiences previously with God i think she might relate more to me

Bonolo: let me get this straight you are going undercover?

Zaine: sort off

Bonolo: what if she falls for you?

Me: that won't happen we not going that deep

She stood up...

Bonolo: did you pray about it?

Zaine: Yes

Bonolo: And?

Zaine: the Holy Spirit didn't say nothing

Bonolo: the last thing i need is papers saying my husband is having an affair

She collected the plates..

Bonolo: You on your own Zee

Faith stood up and held Bonolo's arm..

Faith: Mrs Rhadebe please

Bonolo dropped the plates and then an energy ball formed that locked them inside..

.

.

THERESA

We arrived at the Bangladesh hotel, we went to the dinning area and at the door stood the woman who check up names for reservations on the big board. She always has a beautiful black dress on

Advertisement

black heels,and her blonde hair neatly done..

Her: Good evening

She gave us a big smile..

Cal: how are you Amy?

Amy: fine thanks and you Mr Barca?

Cal: i am well thanks

She looked at me still smiling but the smile was not sincere anymore..

Calvin buttoned his jacket..

Cal: i have a reservation

Amy: let me check

She checked on her board for a while...

Her: you do we have you on table 5 Candace will show you to your table

Cal: thank you

She still looked at me..

Cal: she's with me

Amy: then she's welcome

We waited for "Candace" to come and escort us to our table..

Candace: Good evening Mr Barca

Cal: Please show us to our table

Candace: please follow me

Calvin held my hand and we followed Candace. I was busy looking around such serious people were here and i was getting nervous. As we were walking to our table i bumped into one of the waitresses, the tray she was holding fell..

Me: I am soo sorry

I tried to bend over and help her pick up the glasses but my aching body wouldn't allow me...

Me: i am truly sorry

Her: It's fine

I looked at her and it was Busi..

Me: Busi?

She looked at me..

Busi: Theresa?

She stood up and we shared a hug..

Me: Ahhhh

Her: Sorry are you alright?

Me: Yes

Calvin whispered in my ear..

Cal: ill be at the table

Me: okay

he walked away..

Me: Wow are you a waitress now?

Her: Yes i got prompted

Me: That's good it's really good

She was starring at me that i felt a bit uncomfortable..

Her: And you? what's going in your life?

Me: ummm i am dating Calvin Barca

Her eyes widened..

Her: Really?

Me: Yes matter of fact we here to eat dinner

i faked a smile..

Her: Look at you, going out with my crush

I laughed..

Her: I am happy for you Theresa

I still smiled..

Her: i have been calling you and whatsApping you

Me: been a bit busy

Her: hope you get back to me

Me: i will

We smiled at each other.

Busi: you happy with him right?

Me: he treats me good

Busi: but you happy right friend?

Another waitress came up to us..

Her: Sorry to interrupt but you are Theresa right?

Me: umm yes

her: Mr Barca is requesting your presence

Me: Ohw i will be right there

Her: he said now

Me: of cause

I looked at Busi..

Me: i have to go

Busi: see you around right?

Me: Yeah

I walked away, Busi has been my friend for a while now and i know that she noticed that i was off..

THERESA

I thought that it was just going to be me and Calvin tonight having the 3 course meal dinner that he had promised me, just me and him. As soon as i sat down on my chair after 10min we had people coming into our table, People who amounted to his status and wanted to talk business with him. What was supposed to be our dinner out turned into a business dinner. Some of his male associates were looking at me, they gave me that look that said a lot "why are you with her, she is below your standards" it was embarrassing i won't lie the last thing i

wanted was to embarrass Calvin. I even got intimidated by the successful female personnel who came to our table, i had nothing on them and obviously it would be difficult reaching their status. Calvin was enjoying every conversation that he had with them to a point where he even forgot that i was around, he was enjoying the attention and company that was given to him. All I did as he discussed business was to have my glass filled with wine. I am not a fan of alcohol be it even wine because of my health issues, the last thing i want is to compromise my already impaired health so i restrain from alcohol. Unless pressured to drink when i go out with my besty Busi.

For Appetizers something very unusual was brought into our table which was: chicken strips, Carrot lettuce fetta cheese, and a dressing. Just 3-4 bites and you would be done... The only beverage Cal had was tonic water with ice and lime...

Cal: Toots i think you should go easy on the wine i can see that you getting a bit drunk

Me: I am fine! matter of fact this wine is making me relaxed

He took a bite of the salad...

Him: you supposed to have wine with your Entree as well and you already exhausting the bottle on the appetizer

I raised my hand up and the waitress came..

Me: My glass is empty more wine please

She looked at Calvin.. He nodded.

The waitress poured..

Cal: Theresa you really need to limit on the wine

Me: Honey tonight it was supposed to be you and me but here we are i have been ignored for the past hour you were handling business

Him: i understand but..

Me: no buts.. I am really having a good time isn't that what you want? For me to be happy?

He laid back and put his napkin on the table...

Him: then if you happy i am happy

I smiled..

After the appetizers we waited at least 15min before we had to order Entree.. The waitress was already waiting for us to order..

Cal: Can we get a dry red wine because i am going to have a strip steak

Waitress: i will have it delivered before the steak, you only going to have the strip steak?

Cal: maybe with mashed potatoes&gravey on the side

The waitress wrote and then looked at me, the menu for entrees was something i didn't recognize. There was steak strip, wellington, and everything else. The only thing I understood was chicken and lamb..

Me: Can i please have the lamb?

Waitress: would you like it with Mushroom sauce or pepper sauce?

Me: uhmm mushroom sauce

Her: The wine will come first and then your entrées will take at least 10-15min to prepare

She walked away..

Calvin and i said no word to each other as we waited for our food, the wine came and we drank. It was bitter than the wine i had with my appetizer..

Cal: It's dry red, it opens your appetite and goes well with beef and steak

Me: It's bitter

Him: I know

No matter how bitter it was but i forced my way through it, i had the urge to drink and i was drinking..

Before our entrées came a red head made her way to our table...

Her: Cal?

Cal: Nikki?

She kissed him on his cheek while his hand extended to her waist, i took my glass and forced that bitter wine into my system..

Nikki: i didn't know that you were coming?

Cal: was a spare of a moment

She pulled a chair and joined us, i gulped down the rest of the wine in the glass..

Nikki: wow i haven't seen you since we were supposed to.. You know

I raised my hand and the waitress came...

Me: my glass is empty

I was hurt, Calvin is acting no different to the men i been with. Here he is talking to another woman in my presence wait screw woman she is a call girl...

He gave me a weird look as the waitress poured the wine in my glass.. The Nicki girl ignored my presence, she acted as if like i wasn't there...

Nikki: i have been waiting for you to call

Calvin was concentrating more on my alcohol intake than he was on that girl.... She really made me feel less of myself and killed my self esteem. Nikki looked like a video vixen, she looked like your amber rose with a red weave..

Every response from Cal to her his eyes were fully concentrated on my glass of wine..

Cal: Thank you for coming to greet Nikki

Me: Yeah we about to eat so..

She looked at me..

Nikki: Who is she? She never existed to me until she said something i thought you were sitting alone

Me: Excuse you?

I felt confident now i don't know if it was the wine or what, but I felt like i can tell Nikki shit!!

Me: Girl please the only thing that's quality about you is your hair

She chuckled..

Nikki: unfortunately for you i am not ghetto and Cal doesn't like ghetto girls..

She stood up and kissed him on the cheek again and left..

Me: was nice seeing you again

Cal: as always

She walked away..

Me: Really you going to have her kiss you right in front of me?
Such disrespect Cal!! (yelling)

He looked around and then raised raised up his hand and a
waitress came..

Cal: Cancel our order

Me: What?? I am hungry i wanna eat

He smiled..

Cal: cancel our order please

Waitress: i think it was halfway

Cal: i will still pay for it

Waitress: Let me get the bill

She went to get the bill..

Me: we not going to eat?

Cal: i will have the meals delivered to us at the house

He took out his wallet...

Me: Okay

The waitress came back with the bill...

Calvin gave her his card..

Waitress: You can come with me Sir

He stood up and they walked to the counter for him to pay, he got there and ended up talking with the girls. I saw a wider smile to him all he has done was to give me a slight one. I felt disrespected by what he was doing so i stood up and walked out to to the parking, the wine got me so bad i was walking funny.....

I waited for him and he showed up after a few minutes.

Me: that took you long enough

He took our his car keys and unlocked the car, i opened the door went in and banged it. He got in on the other side..

Me: you truly down graded me tonight i won't lie

He started the car..

Me: Really Calvin??? You would embarrass me like that in front of your hoe? Is it because i don't have red hair?

He kept quiet and continued driving...

Me: fuck you!! You don't do that

The wine got me feeling like i can talk to him anyhow, i felt like i was ontop of the world..

He took a different turn..

Me: Where are we going?

He drove to a dark area where there was nothing but trees on the sides and us only on the road, he pulled over..

Me: Cal what's going on?

He got out from his side and went all around to my side, he opened my door and dragged me out by pulling my hair.. I fell to the ground my tshirt lifted up as he was dragging me across..

Me: Calvin stop!!

He got me deep in the woods and started kicking me repeatedly, i already have bruises and he was putting more pain on my body...I cried, i screamed and he didn't stop..

He dragged me again and went to bang my head on the bonnet of his car, i truly felt like i was dying. He was going to kill me and i had no strength to fight him, he was very strong..

CALVIN

After the incident with Theresa i left her there in the dark woods clinging with a thread to life, i only realized the damage that i had done when I witnessed her laying helpless on the cold ground failing to even cry. This child had endured a lot from my hand, I wish she could've just listened to me when i said one glass was enough but she pushed me to do this to her. I couldn't let myself come into terms with what i had done, so i thought driving home and probably leaving her to die would be a better solution to this problem. If Theresa is no more then she won't be a threat to my destiny, the only reason I kept her so close, the only reason I had monitored her all these years was to make sure that she doesn't become what she was destined to be. I made sure that she doesn't become Calvin's fate and my bane, And that alone is the main reason i had distanced her from God with Anger and pain..

The human race fails to distinguish between good and evil at times, they tend to blame God with every pain that strike their heart forgetting that God would never hurt what he loves, he himself in his word he declared without any force but from a sincere fatherly loving heart that there's nothing, that can separate humans from his love not even sin, not even Angels. The day that God created a human being in his own likeness is

the day my world collapsed, i didn't know that such perfection can be attained from just soil? I didn't know that life can come out from him breathing his own breath to his perfection. I knew then that this was going to be my way of seeking vengeance. I knew that if i touched a human being i touch God's heart, but unfortunately I can go as far as only touching the flesh but i cannot touch the spirit. Never allow your spirit to sin that's a sacred gift from a father (God) to his children (humans) its what connects you to the most high, it's what connects you to heaven, it's what connects you to your Father. God can allow me to torture the body but the spirit is something that he himself would leave his throne in heaven and do away with me forever if i could touch the spirit, that is why when you die your spirit doesn't die..

I poured myself a glass of whiskey on the rocks in celebration of my bane being no more, If only Theresa knew how much strength she possessed, if only she knew that she had the most powerful Angel by her side to command (Nimueh) she would've long defeated me..

I mostly get what I want given the fact that the human involved is weak..

After enjoying my whiskey i went to the bathroom and took a shower then after I went through some paperwork, i haven't been at work in a long time it's time now i regain my life..

As i was busy working i could hear my warrior Angels of darkness falling, i could feel their sob, their fall, and their pain. I stood up and faced up someone uninvited is in my territory.. I heard the door bell...

I got out of the study and made my way downstairs, i was so silent with my footsteps because I wanted to know first what awaits me behind that closed door. As i drew closer to the door fear took place, it's a powerful servant of heaven that is at my door step i could feel it..

I slowly opened the door and it was Zaine..

Me: What... ?

Before I could finish my sentence one of the warrior angels that he was with threw a fire ball right at me and i found myself being dragged across the floor.. I looked at that area were the fireball had hit me and it was an open wound

Advertisement

i was in excruciating pain..

When Zaine gets angry, Zaine gets angry...

Me: you know that you cannot kill me so are you here to torture me?

He lifted up his hand and at his command the Angel lifted me up, i was dangling in the air..

Zaine: Stay away from her!

I looked at him..

Me: what? is she still alive?

Zaine: Stay away from her or else you and i we going to have a problem

Me: It's me that you have a problem with leave my agent alone, leave Calvin's body alone!

Zaine: I couldn't care less about him, you touch my own you channeling a fight

He twisted his hand and my neck started twisting..

Me: Wait!!!!!!

He stopped..

Me: How did you? How did you command the warrior Angels to come here while your being here was not even permitted by the Holy Spirit? I can't sense the Holy Spirit with you

Zaine: I am Zaine Radebe you should know that by now

Me: All along i thought that Ayo was the most powerful Prophet of this lifetime but you Zaine you are more powerful than i thought

He commanded the Angel to put me down..

Me: As much as you would wanna drive me away to distant lands but you can't you have intervened soo many times but unfortunately this is not your fight, only Theresa can stand against me

Zaine: and she will

Me: with her heart so closed to God we will see

Zaine: We will see indeed

He walked away with the angel.

Now things have taken a different turn, now i need to let Calvin handle this. Him alone, he can draw Theresa closer again..

I awakened his soul and left his body, he was laying on the floor the wound caused by the fire ball went with me since it was meant for me which is Good i cannot have Calvin in pain, he has to act fast we no longer have time..

THERESA

A certain area on my arm felt painful, i had a stinging sensation there. I felt a bit warm, i heard machines beeping. I was very much out of it but i forced to open my eyes i couldn't open them fully i could feel that they were swollen, everything appeared a bit blurry at first but after a few seconds i could see clear, i had an oxygen on my mouth helping me to breath..

I looked around and i saw some guy sitting on the small bench next to my bed, he was reading something.

With my other hand i reached for the oxygen and lowered it..

Me: Who... Who...

He looked at me..

Him: Shhhhh you safe now

Me: Where am i... What..

I tried moving but my body was aching, it was like a million needles pierced my body...

Him: let me get someone

He stood up and left, he then came back with a little girl..

She looked at me with a smile..

Her: Hello Theresa my name is Faith

Me: Fai... Faith.. I..

I remember that name and most of all i remember that voice..

Her: don't worry i will make you feel better

She put her hand on my forehead and then looked up at the ceiling..

Her: Göylər yuxarıda şəfa bilər (may the heavens above heal you)

She looked at me..

Her: Rest now you will wake up feeling better

Something deep inside of me told me that i can trust her...

Her: close your eyes

I closed my eyes and hoped for a peaceful sleep...

CALVIN

I opened my eyes and realized that I was laying on the floor in the lounge, i looked around and i was alone. I felt an intensifying pain in my tummy, i lifted up my shirt to see but i had nothing everything seemed well with me. I got up and saw a trail of blood that was leading upstairs, i followed it and found the devil on the floor of my bedroom bleeding. Sometimes it's difficult for me to look at him because he looks exactly like me, he took the human form of my likeness..

Him: Calvin there's no time to waste

I went to him..

Him: I need to go and fix myself

Me: what happened?

Him: Zaine happened

Me: you seem to be in pain

Him: I am now listen to me while i am gone you need to get Theresa back

Me: Why? What happened?

Him: a lot happened i think she is at the hospital or something but I am not sure, what i am sure about is that Zaine might've rescued her. I messed up big time you have to fix it

Me: Of course i will fix it

He held my hand..

Him: Remember Calvin if you dare betray me you will never see little Claire again she will be my little dark angel

Me: i understand

He looked at me one last time and then vanished..

Unfortunately i remember everything from him attacking CJ to him beating up Theresa, i wanted to act but i couldn't. My soul was buried deep within, it was locked deep were i couldn't do anything but to watch those i loved being tortured...

Enough is enough!!! I need to fix this mess.

CALVIN

what i have come to realize is that the devil has some sort of PhD in lying, manipulating, and mind tricks. He makes his threats sound or seem so undoubtedly real, he has always threatened to turn Claire evil if i ever betray him. He has always threatened to take my life and my riches from me should I ever betray him but here we are even today nothing has happened. I swear i don't care anymore, i don't care if he comes for my life but what i care about is the ones that i love i am tired of seeing them suffering because of my own selfishness. I have never been broke and i understand that if Theresa and i want to be one day, then one of us has to jump ships. Initially it seemed easier for her to turn dark but after how much she was hurt by the devil both physically and emotionally, i think it will be better if i give it all up..

I have been with different women before and none of them ever made me feel like this, none of them ever tore deep inside my cold heart and brought about "Love" i never even knew that such embedded deep inside of me until Theresa came along. If only i was told before, if only i was let known that love exists and that one day i was going to find myself a woman tailored for me then i would've made different decisions. Right now nothing matters, not the money, not the power, the fame, and

respect, all of that don't matter if i am going to be robbed of her love. I would give it all up to see her smile again, to hear that soft laughter and stare deep into those eyes knowing very well that she feels the same way..

I love Resa, i love my Toots and i am going to get her no matter what..

I drove to the hospital to go and check up on CJ, that's the least i can do with all that has happened. I still cannot believe that I hurt him, i am very fond of CJ he is like a Son that i never had...He was still unconscious unfortunately I called the Doctor to have a word with him..

Me: how is he?

He sighed and looked at him while gently balancing his hands on the bars of the bed...

Dr: After the last scan i really thought that he was going to wake up because there's no hemorrhage and no cerebral aneurysm

Me: Is he going to be okay? Is there hope?

Dr: It doesn't make sense really everything seems fine with him but he just cannot wake up i understand he sustained a head injury but with everything seemingly fine i don't see any reason why he doesn't wake up

I held his hand..

Me: You do everything that you supposed to do for him don't worry about the bill

Dr: of course Mr Barca

CJ has to wake up, he has to do it for Theresa if something happens to him i would never forgive myself and Theresa would never forgive me wherever she is...

I pulled the chair and sat down while still holding his hand.

Dr: If i may ask what happened? When he was brought in i believe you said he sustained a head injury from a fall?

Me: Errr..He plays rugby

Dr: i understand

Me: thank you Dr, thank you for everything

Dr: i have to go i will ask the Nurse to check up on him later

Me: thank you

He walked away..

For the first time my heart was broken seeing him laying there and not moving knowing that everything is my fault shuttered me...

Me: I wish there was something i could do to fix this, there has to be something i can do

I heard a voice speaking...

Voice: There is something that you can do

I looked at the door and it was Nimueh...

Me: Nimueh

She made her way in..

Me: what are you doing here?

Her: Theresa is here too

I stood up..

Me: Really? Where? How is she?

Her: unfortunately you cannot see her

Me: what do you mean i cannot see her?

She looked at CJ..

Her: he won't wake up

Me: The Dr said everything is okay

Her: physically there's nothing wrong with him the fall wasn't fatal

Me: Then why won't he wake up?

Her: Calvin the hand that touched him was the hand of the devil, evil was involved

I sat down again..

Her: only good can reverse what has been done

Me: Of cause why didn't i think of that? Can you do it?

Her: I am a warrior Angel not a healer

Me: Then im doomed Theresa will never forgive me

Her: There's a way to help him

Me: how?

Her: Faith

Me: Then we should get her

Her: hang on

I looked at her..

Her: Calvin if Faith helps CJ we need you to do something for us in return

Me: What is that?

Her: you must stay away from Theresa

Me: That will never happen

Her: Theresa needs to fulfill her destiny she cannot do that if you in the way

Me: shouldn't it be her decision?

Her: you are her weakness if she sees you she might not wanna continue with her journey and she has to stand against the devil, she has to help you

Me: we two hearts that are madly in love why can't we be? What wrong have we committed that heaven forbids our love?

Her: This is not just ordinary Love Calvin she is of pure heart and you sold your soul to the devil

Advertisement

evil and good will never exist along side together. Theresa tried to jump ships but you saw what happened, the devil in you hurt her. Calvin she was laying helpless on the side of a dark road on a cold night with bruises and she was bleeding, she had no life in her she couldn't cry for help all she could do was to beg for death to come right at that moment.. If i didn't connect with her i..

Me: Stop..

I couldn't take what Nimueh was saying she was breaking me and i also couldn't stop the tears..

Her: I can see how much you love her Calvin never in your life have you ever been this broken or shed a tear, the only time you did that was at your Brother's funeral. God doesn't hate you, he only despises the devil in you.. Ever since i have been a warrior Angel i have seen devil worshippers who couldn't be saved but you, you have a chance at Grace. God's hand upon you is merciful, he is the God of second chances...

I wiped my tears...

Me: After all is done? Will she be returned to me?

Her: It will be all up to her

Me: Heaven won't influence her against me?

Her: we are not evil Calvin we do not temper with true and pure love

I looked at CJ..

Me: I will make sure that Theresa doesn't see me

Her: Thank you

Me: I am not doing it for you, i am doing it for CJ and Theresa

Her: either way thank you.. I will go and get Faith

She walked out to get faith, i do admit i have never been this broken and hearing that i have to stay away from Theresa made things worse.

.

.

THERESA

I woke up feeling much better my body was still aching yes but it was better than before, i was alone in the ward now. I slowly lifted my body up to sit in an upright position with the pillows supporting my back..

I took a few seconds to let my mind run back to what happened last night, how Calvin was kicking me, hitting my face hard against the bonnet of his car and then leaving me to die there. It was dark, i was all alone i couldn't even move and no car passed there. I really thought that i wasn't going to make it, i thought that it was going to be the end of me. I have faced a lot of dark moments in my life, but Last night was the most darkest i am even surprised that I am still alive... I wiped my tears.

Me: How did i make it? How did i end up here?

It's truly amazing i survived a terrible situation...

I heard someone clearing their throat, it was the guy who was here this morning..

Him: May i please come in?

I nodded and he made his way in, he sat down on the small bench..

Him: How are you feeling?

He was wearing a hat that hid half of his face, all i could see was his nose and slightly pinkish lips. I had no doubt that he looked handsome, he was dressed perfectly too but what i couldn't understand is why he was hiding all that cuteness under his hat.. All along i thought that my eye was swollen but i had a bandage covering my face...

Me: Who are you? You were here this morning too

Him: My name is Zaine Ra...

He cleared his throat again..

Him: Just call me Zee

Me: Zee?

Him: Yes Mam'

Me: do we know each other?

Him: i don't believe so

Me: then how do you know me? Why are you here?

Him: i was driving last night and I found you laid in the middle of the road, i almost ran you over

Me: Must've been when i tried to crawl

Him: What happened? Where you kidnapped?

Me: I wish

Him: at least i deserve to know what happened

Thinking about the horror of last night, i couldn't stop my tears from falling i couldn't stop myself from being emotional.. That experience scared me soo much that I was still shaking..

Him: Hey come on, you safe that's all that matters

I shook my head no..

Me: He is going to find me and..

Him: Calm down you are safe here

Me: You don't understand he is the devil!

Him: who?

Me: My.. My boyfriend

Him: he won't touch you

Me: you don't know how powerful he is

Him: and i will make sure that he doesn't touch you

Me: how can you be so confident?

He extended his hand to mine..

Him: because he knows.. I mean he doesn't know how powerful i am

I looked at his hand and then i looked at him, he took his hand off mine..

Him: Sorry i didn't mean too..

He stood up..

Him: why don't you get some rest i will come and see you again

He walked away, something is totally off with this gentleman.

How can a stranger be soo caring?? I don't trust nice strangers so easily

CALVIN

I fell asleep in CJ's ward while i waited for Faith to come, i passed out right after writing Theresa a letter that i was going to have it delivered to her by the Nurse since i wasn't permitted to see her. I am willing to support her 100% if after all of this we going to be together without heaven or hell having to against each other. All my life i thought that money was the only thing that mattered in the world, i thought that money ruled everything but i was wrong. There's far too precious things that money cannot buy and one of them is true love, the kind of love that leaves a warm sensation in your heart. I am talking about the kind of love that you would lay down your own life for the one that has stolen your heart, i am talking about that kind of love that cannot even be bought by any precious jewel. I was fortunate enough that even with my darkest soul, heaven didn't close the curtain for me to find my soul mate and for that i will forever be grateful. Indeed God is not a human being, if my fate laid in the hands of a human being i wouldn't be here right now because us humans were tend to judge based on our emotions. I wouldn't be given a second chance at life, it is without doubt that i must proclaim the words said before that indeed God is truly just and fair in all ways.

When i was still attached to the devil the only feelings i had was hate, anger, jealousy and everything else that was not pleasing to the soul my heart was cold and I shared not in human feelings. I caused a lot of people pain but most of all i was causing myself more harm than good because those are heavy feelings for a soul to carry, you are like chained and carrying more than 1000 bricks. They burden you, they eat away your soul and turn you into something that you not.....

I was woken up by someone gently shaking me i got up and it CJ he was awake, Nimueh was true to her promise now i have to be true to mine....

Me: wait a minute

I opened the letter and included that, now Theresa will have more reason to see that heaven is not the enemy here but the devil has always been.

CJ: why am i in a hospital? What happened?

Me: you don't remember what happened?

CJ: i don't remember anything

Me: Well..

Telling him that the devil knocked him out might not be the best idea right now..

Me: you got a head injury

CJ: how?

Me: Well you were training with your peers and i got a call from the school that you suffered a heavy blow to your head i think you have a concussion i will go and call the Dr

CJ: No i think im fine that's not necessary

Me: are you sure?

CJ: Yeah i am sure

Me: For a moment there i thought we lost you

CJ: for how long have i been out?

Me: I am not sure i think two days or so

CJ: must've been a serious heavy blow

Me: I guess so

My phone rang again i have been getting calls from the office i thought i made it clear when i sent my assistant an Email this morning that i won't be able to come to the office for a couple of days because i am busy fixing some family issues, but she just won't stop calling..

Me: i have to take this it's the office

I stood up and went to answer it outside..

Me: didn't you get my Email?

Her: I did

Me: so why are you calling? I told you that i am busy sorting out some family issues

Her: I think that you should really come to the office

Me: Why? Can't you guys handle things on your own?

Her: It's really bad sir really bad

Me: fine i am on my way

Her: thank you

I hunged up and turned around only to bump into faith..

Me: Faith

Her: Mr Barca

Me: Thank you for healing CJ

Her: I believe you have something for Theresa

Me: Yes i wrote her something i didn't know if it was appropriate to give it to her

Her: may i?

I handed it to her..

Her: have a nice day

Me: you too

I walked back to the ward..

Me: I have to go there's a crisis at the office

Him: who was that girl that you were standing with there?

Me: girl?

Him: black hair

Me: ohw Faith

Him: know her?

Me: sort off

Him: she looks pretty

Me: don't even think of it

Him: think of what?

Me: Faith is not just another typical girl she's way out of your colleague

Him: you saying i am not good enough for a girl like her

Me: I am saying you can hit on any girl you want just not faith

Him: whatever you say... Tell me where is Theresa?

I didn't know what to say to him..

Him: she ditched us again?

Me: No she didn't

Him: Then where is she?

Me: Let's rather talk about that when i get back

Him: Ayt then

Me: be good

I made my way to the car i wonder what this crisis is all about that it cannot wait. Tomorrow i must go and check up on Zerra and Claire before they think that i have abandoned them..

I got inside my car, played some music and fixed my rear view mirror. I was about to drive when my rear view mirror became misty, i saw words being written there which read:

"You have betrayed me"

I knew who they were from but i didn't understand why he didn't show himself as usual..

.

.

THERESA

"Toots i know that you probably do not wanna see me ever again and i understand

Advertisement

i have caused you soo much unbearable pain and you have every right to be mad. The honest truth is that i love you but i should've fixed myself first before endangering you and CJ like that. Know that CJ is fine, Faith has healed him and i think you must have a word with him. I am ready to make things right between us, if you feel the same way too then please listen to Faith and Nimueh they only wanna help us. I love you Theresa and i will always love you, whether you in my life or not"

I closed my eyes and tears streamed down my cheeks, i felt anger arising deep inside when i thought about how the devil has tortured me and those that i love..

Me: what am i supposed to do?

I opened my eyes and looked at Faith who brought me the letter.

Faith: we don't know when he is going to strike so we must always be ready

I look at faith and her appearance is just that of a normal teenage girl, there's no give away that she has been blessed with the most powerful gift.

Faith: It won't be easy Theresa you need to know that

Me: I know and thank you for healing my Brother

Faith: I have done more than that

I looked at her..

Faith: The Devil left Calvin to gather strength when i was healing CJ i took it upon myself to block that pathway of him possessing Calvin let alone Calvin seeing him

Me: so Calvin is free?

Faith: not entirely, after you have defeated Lucifer you will bring forth the code that connected him and Calvin, if you attain that code then we can break the communication between them forever he will never have any way of reaching out to Calvin

Me: i understand

Faith: you must do more than just understand Theresa, you have not seen what i have seen

Me: so what's going to happen now? Faith: You will have to say goodbye to your loved ones and then you find a temporary home at St Luther Ministries were you will learn everything and prepare for the journey that lies ahead for it is not going to be a smooth one

Me: Still listening

Faith: i do not want to trouble you right now with deep details we will take it one day at a time.. Tell me why the change of

heart? Are you venturing into this because of the love you have for Calvin? Are you doing it because you wanna be with him?

Me: that would've been my first answer but no

Faith: amuse me

Me: when i was laying on that ground that night i had no life left in me i thought I was going to die i thought it was over, no one could've found me it was an isolated dark road far away from other roads that had cars. When I blacked out i thought my soul had left my body, i thought i was done but here i am something out there or someone out there has always looked out for me and it is definitely not the devil. The devil is too heartless, he is filled with hate and misery all he does is cause people pain. Faith i was face to face with him, i was in his presence. I saw and experienced what he is all about.

Faith: What are you saying?

Me: i have been looking at this all wrong the same pain i have experienced all those years is the same pain he put me through when he possessed Calvin's body, Faith it was not God and never was

She held my hand...

Me: The same God i have insulted and despised is the same God who saved me that night when the devil was going to kill

me, why Faith? After all the years i have spent hating him he still saved me i don't understand

Faith was starting to get emotional too..

Her: once you open your heart to the love of God you will see that he is not the enemy. When i didn't understand my spiritual gifts i thought i was cursed, the community that i lived in made me to believe that I was a demon, that i was working with evil forces. I was persecuted by my community same people who witnessed me growing up, they wanted to stone me to death but the hand of God saved me and here i am today

Me: It's truly amazing

Faith: you are very special Theresa and very powerful the devil saw that and he was intimidated hence he spent all those years manipulating you trying to turn you against God trying to shift your attention so that you don't realize your destiny

Me: so this is it

Faith: This is it

Me: can i ask?

Her: Yes

Me: Why me why was i chosen for such a big mission to stand against the devil? I am no one i don't even know how to pray i

am sure there's better Christians than i. Why me? I am a nobody

Her: you should get some rest Theresa

Me: i am not tired

I could see that she was hiding something from me

Me: Faith what is it?

Her: It's nothing

Me: You hiding something from me what is it?

Her: some other things i am not obligated to say

Me: what other things?

Her: you must rest

Me: but i don't wanna rest i am not tired

She put her hand on my forehead...

Her: now you are

I slowly closed my eyes..

36

CALVIN

I arrived at the office and it was a bit of turmoil, phones were ringing none stop most workers were going up and down i don't know what was going on but i needed to get to my assistant so she can explain to me what's happening. She wasn't at her desk, i made my way to my office and she was there on the phone.

Her: Yes... We totally understand.. Thank you..

She put the phone down and sighed.

Me: what's happening?

Her: Clients are pulling out Mr Barca

Me: what do you mean clients are pulling out?

Her: we have 5 already that have pulled out because of premature deaths of which they believe was caused by our drug

Me: that is absurd!

Her: they raised up their fears and concerns they said their patients presented with unusual effects from the drug

Me: This cannot be happening

Her: That's not all

Me: more bad news?

Her: Sway is building a water tight case against you he is going to petition the court to grant him a warrant so he can get the drug and have it tested

I sat down..

Me: there's calls that i have to make then

Her: do you think we can recover from this?

Me: i hope so now please give me some space for a few minutes

Her: i shall do so

I took my phone and called Sterling as she walked out..

Sterling: Hello?

Me: go to the warehouse and make sure that they do away with all the cocaine there

Him: first of all its good to hear from you

Me: this is no time to play catch up Sterling, we have a serious crisis

Him: what is going on?

Me: Sway might be on to me

Him: but Sway doesn't know about the warehouse

Me: he is going to break his back in making sure that he gets something to lock me up for a very long time

Him: Okay i am on it

Me: and one more thing

Him: what is it?

Me: Sway mustn't get the drug from any of the private practices that we supply with the opioid

Him: Barca that's going to take a while you have a lot of clients

Me: some of them pulled out, it's the ones that pulled out who need silencing

Him: how many so far?

Me: 5

Him: won't he obtain somewhere else?

Me: he doesn't know how many clients i have i am going to delete the information on the data base of our current clients incase he opts for that and hope to recover it later after the investigation

Him: ill try my best man ill get some of the guys to help

Me: thank you very much and do you still have contacts of that IT guy?

Him: i will check and then Sms you

Me: Thank you man

Him: let me get cracking then

I banged the phone against the table, this was very frustrating.

I saw a writing on the wall which read:

"This is only the beginning"

I looked around and i was alone..

Me: Why are you being a coward all of a sudden? Just face me dammit!!!

I stood up and cleared everything from my desk to the floor, i was that frustrated..

My Assistant walked in..

Her: Sir?

Me: what? (shouting)

She kept quiet..

Me: sorry i didn't mean too...

I took a deep breath..

Me: what is it?

Her: there's someone who wants to see you?

Me: Sway?

Her: No...her name is Carol

Great! This is just what i need..

Her: i can tell her to come back tomorrow

Me: No.. Send her in

She looked around..

Her: are you sure?

Me: Yes

She nodded and walked out to get Carol, i started picking up my things from the floor back to the table..

Carol walked in while holding her bag and files..

Carol: Mr Barca

I got up..

Me: Carol

She didn't look happy at all..

Me: please have a seat

She looked around..

Me: excuse the mess

She sat down on the chair..

Me: would you like anything to drink?

Her: No thank you

Me: what can i do for you?

Her: Yesterday we showed up at your house and you were not there

Me: aren't you supposed to come next week?

She took out a paper and handed it to me..

Me: it was yesterday, sorry i mixed up the dates

Her: how are the kids? We got a report from CJ's school that he has missed school without any reason given

Me: uhm..

Carol: and apparently Zerra is living with your baby mama?

Me: Things have been a bit off lately

Carol: Mr Barca i don't think you are fit anymore to look after these kids
Me: Are you going to take them away?

Carol: After the court has made a decision yes, we going to find them a home. A stable home

Me: You cannot do that

Carol: The safety of these children come first

Me: and i am not debating that

Her: glad to see that we are on the same page

She stood up...

Carol: ill be in touch have a nice day

She walked away. Things are falling apart for me, they falling apart so bad. I hope it will be all worth it, i hope Theresa will succeed after such a big sacrifice from my side...

I stood up and paced around the office trying to find a solution to the Zerra and CJ situation, i cannot have them taken away to a foster home... What seemed like a brilliant idea hit me..

I went and got my cellphone to call Sterling again..

Sterling: Barca i am on it

Me: i need a big favour

Sterling: What is it?

Me: how fast can you get me three fake passports?

I took my car keys and walked out..

.

.

THERESA

When i woke up later that day i went to the reception so i can get CJ's ward, i am sure that right now he is mad at me and doesn't wanna see me...

They told me his ward and i went there, i stood at the door first and looked at him he was busy with his phone..

Me: Pumpkin

He got his eyes from his cellphone and then looked at me as i made my way in..

Me: How are you?

He ignored me..

Me: CJ come on

He still ignored me..

Me: well then im just gonna sit here

I got the small bench and sat down..

I guess he couldn't ignore me forever...

Him: Why have you abandoned us?

Me: i haven't abandoned about you guys

Him: Zerra is being looked after by a stranger she must be scared, she doesn't have me or you close to her

Me: CJ i know that i haven't been the best Sister and the best guardian lately but..

Him: Theresa if you knew that we were going to be a burden to you after Mom died why didn't you just ask social services to help?

Me: because i thought that i had everything under control

Him: but you didn't you were suffering i know that you thought i was young and everything but i use to hear you sneaking in different men almost every night in the house when you thought we were sleeping

Me: i admit i have made choices that i am not proud of but if i had to do that again i will because there's nothing that i wouldn't do for you and Zerra

I saw tears forming in his eyes..

Him: i just want us to go back home go back to how things used to be

I held his hand..

Me: and we will i just need to complete this mission

Him: what mission?

Me: I wish i can tell you but you wouldn't understand

Him: wait.. are you leaving again?

Me: only for a while

He got my hand off from his..

Him: Go..

Me: CJ

Him: just go!!

Me: I promise you after this, when everything is over i will never leave you guys ever again

He covered his face with both his

hands he wasn't loud but i knew that he was crying...

Me: C...

Maybe i should just give him some space..

I stood up and limped my way to the door

Advertisement

things are happening in my life right now that i don't quite understand. Everything is just dark and there's no light, there's no glimpse of hope. I hope this mission is worth it...

I put my hand on the door frame and let the tears fall down, you can never understand how broken i was there's nothing more heartbreaking like doing this to my Siblings. I feel like i have failed them...

As i was holding on to the door frame for support and looking down, someone stood in front of me. The shoes and the smell of his cologne were very familiar..

He put his hand on my chin and made me to look at him, it was Calvin. We starred at each other, on my side tears were creating a stream of river and on his side i could see that he was broken too..

How did we get ourselves in such a messy situation? Our biggest sin was to fall for each other and that was our biggest sin to fall in love..

.

.

FAITH

I left my qauters to go and sit inside the church for a while i was very distressed because i could feel Theresa's pain, i could feel how broken she was that she will have to be separated from her loved ones for a while. My gift comes off as a blessing and as a curse at times, things that i am made to see some of them are not always pleasant.

I heard the door closing, but i didn't even dare to look at who it was.

I heard Father Luther's voice..

Him: Dina

No one has ever called me by my true name before.

My name is Dina and i am a high priestess, i am from were no human has ever set foot before. I have within me great knowledge, wisdom, and understanding. I have the power of healing, nothing has been kept from me and I am the guardian of the Angels. When I am sent out for a mission i always take on my human form as "Faith"

He came and sat next to me..

Him: i am from your quarters and you weren't there

Me: Something has been troubling me

Him: Theresa?

Me: God never makes a mistake but with Theresa i wonder if...

Him: It's no mistake child

Me: She made a promise that she cannot keep

Him: what Promise?

Me: she promised her brother that after her mission she will never leave again

Him: she seems fond of her siblings

Me: and that scares me a lot

Him: everything will fall into place in time

Me: i am beginning to doubt that Father. As much as Theresa thinks that her mission is to only defeat Lucifer so he can save Calvin but the true reason for her mission is for her to discover her true identity. How will she be able to leave her siblings forever when the time comes? How will she accept her true form that she is an Angel, to us her true family she goes by the name of Urieh the Angel of Serenity her home is in the heart of the blessed waters, her home is in my island. The island of the blessed, the waters need her after this great mission that she will be venturing on with Nimueh, she belongs home with us.

THERESA

I thought that when Calvin and i saw each other feelings of anger were going to spiral out of control deep within me, but it wasn't like that, instead the love that I have for him took over. I wish that he made different choices in life then we wouldn't have to go through all this obstacles in trying to save our relationship. I love him with all my being and another reason why i am carrying through with this mission is because I want us to be together with having to deal with all this mess. He walked me back to my ward, i got in bed and he sat down on the bench next to my bed. If only i could have him by my side everyday, if only a miracle could just happen that we allowed to be together without me having to do this..

Him: are you ready?

Me: i think so

He held my hand..

Him: I am sorry Toots everything is my fault

Me: don't blame yourself we all have done things that we are not proud of

With someone like me who has made life threatening mistakes i am in no position to judge Calvin in the choices that he has made too..

Me: I will do this then it will be all over we will be together finally

Him: It amazes me how much you still want to be with me after everything that has happened

Me: i don't care about what happened, what i care about is being with the ones that i love

Him: If i knew then that one day i would meet such a phenomenal person like you i would've long turned down the card and gave in, i wouldn't have sold my soul for money. I thought money was everything I only realized late that money actually is not everything, because if cannot buy special moments like this

Me: i have learned that love, happiness, and peace are far way priceless

Him: that is true

I yawned...

Him: maybe you should get some sleep it's late anyway

Me: are you going to leave?

Him: i would rather be here than anywhere else watching you sleep

He stood up and sat on my bed, he cuddled me while i slept on his chest. Out of everything that has gone wrong in my life, Calvin is the mistake that I don't regret.

I raised up my head and looked at him..

Me: I love you

Him: I love you more

He leaned over and kissed me..

.

.

CALVIN

I left the hospital in the middle of the night while Theresa was fast asleep, i am glad she didn't see me walking out of her ward. It was good seeing her again, i am grateful to have spent that moment with her just starrng at her sleeping peacefully like that warmed the coldest part of my heart. I am grateful to the one above that i saw her for the last time before embarking on this dangerous journey. I cannot have her siblings taken away because of my mistakes, i am going into hiding with them when she is done with whatever that she's required to do then

she can have them back and i can take responsibility for all my actions...

Very early in the morning i prepared everything

Advertisement

i packed the kids things first i didn't know what to take but i took everything and i took a few of my clothes too. I went and put the bags in the trunk of my car and i looked at my house one last time before driving to get CJ and Zerra so that we can go....

As i was driving i got a call from my assistant, everytime when i receive a call from her my heart jumps a little in fear.

Me: Hello

Her: Mr Barca

Me: talk to me

Her: Sway is here

Me: that was quick

Her: he wants you to go down to the police station for some questioning

Me: i will go there later

I heard Sway talking in the background.

Sway: give me the phone

I think my Assistant gave him the phone or he snatched it away from him....

Sway: you better get your arse down at the station Barca

Me: i am still running a few errands a..

Sway: you don't have time to run anything! It's over Barca

Me: It's over?

Him: your client Dr Nkuna he had your pill tested and it has cocaine

Me: That doesn't sound right

Him: I don't think you understand how much trouble you are in Mr Barca you endangered the lives of many innocent citizens, families lost their loved ones because of your cruelty! You supposed to heal these people not harm them and i am going to get justice for all of them!

Me: don't you dare for a second make it seem as if like you are doing this for innocent citizens as you put it, you doing this for yourself to get revenge on me for killing your parents!

Sway: It doesn't matter who i am doing it for what matters is that finally i got you! If you do not come down to the station willingly a warrant for your arrest will be issued out!

Fuck! The last thing i want is my face splashed all over as a "wanted man" how will i cross the border if that happens? All i want is to be out of the country before he gets the warrant of my arrest, at least i cannot be arrested in another country for a crime that i committed in South Africa. He won't attain the warrant of arrest today he still needs crucial evidence to pin me down, if they turn my company upside down and don't find the cocaine then he doesn't have much of a case because the pills that we keep in the company are clean...

Sway: I am warning you don't make this hard on yourself

I cut him off and then called Sterling...

Sterling: Barca

Me: did you get us a secret location?

Sterling: Yes i will send you the coordinates

Me: at some point i am going to throw my phone away i hope that there is a pay phone nearby at the secret location so i can call you

Sterling: Yes i made sure of that

Me: Good!

After the call with Sterling i sent Wendy a text message that she must prepare Zerra i am coming to fetch her..

.

.

THERESA

"I found myself deep under the waters i don't know if i was in an ocean or what but I was deep under the water. It was beautiful under there, there was a bright light and the water was very clean and Sparkling. I was dressed in a different outfit, i looked different like a goddess or an angel i really couldn't make it out but the waters had my reflection so i could see how i looked like. It was a beautiful experience i won't lie the waters followed through to every movement that i made, was like they were obeying me or something. As i was enjoying the peaceful serenity of the water they started changing colour, they became red. I felt myself drowning, the water was getting in my lungs. I tried to push myself to the surface but the waters were very violent and i mean very violent. As i was busy trying to save my already dying self i felt something colder than the water on my body, something that was very heavy. I checked what it was and it was a very big snake, one that i have never seen before it had rolled itself around my body and it was squeezing tight. It was squeezing the life out of me and breaking my bones i couldn't breath, i was dying"

I woke up very quickly and gasped for air while breathing heavily. I looked around and i was alone in my ward..

Me: It was a dream

I started coughing i could feel the water in my lungs and as if like that wasn't scary enough, i was wet my bed was wet too with the dirty red water.

It felt like my journey was about to begin.

CALVIN

I thought that the Dr was going to give me a difficult time with CJ, but after explaining the importance of the matter he discharged him. I didn't tell him the truth i just made up an insane emergency story that he believed and then he had him discharged. With Zerra it wasn't that difficult the only hiccup was Claire she couldn't stop crying for us when she saw us leave but i couldn't take her with us, she was more safer with Wendy...

Sterling did send me details of the place that we supposed to find shelter in until our passports are ready, it was a cabin in the woods far away from town and far away from people. It was a secret place that wasn't going to be spotted that easily, i gave Sterling precise instructions that he must make it homely and welcoming for the kids.. Even though it was such short notice but i had prepared for the trip, i had my gun tightly around my waist i couldn't leave without it i have to protect the kids. I had withdrawn enough money for us to get everything that we going to need for the next few weeks, until everything is set and complete. If Carol tries to contact me she won't find me, and when she learns that I have taken the kids that's a case of abduction on my ass ontop of Sway biting my head off.. I fixed my rear view mirror to look at the kids, CJ was on his

phone and Zerra had passed out. We cannot afford to leave any traces of how we look like so i had CJ wear a beanie hat and a hoodie hat, i was wearing a cap and Zerra was wearing a pink hat..

CJ was concerned at first and asked me a few questions, he is 15 i trust him to understand. The only thing i told him was that if we don't run away they going to be taken away to a foster home and we couldn't have that after all that was the most important information..

I don't like the fact that he was going to miss school but we have no choice, we have to run away.. It was going to be a long drive to the cabin, so i stopped at some garage for fresh air and refreshments.. I got out of the car and lit up a cigarette to smoke, CJ came out of the car after a while..

CJ: how far along are we?

Me: still a long way but we going to stop by at a friend's place to change the car

CJ: so that we cannot be traced

Me: You smart

CJ: not long ago my life was normal, now i am on the run that happens in the movies most of the time and the games that i play

Me: sounds like a serious adventure right?

CJ: im not complaining i mean i am all for the action just hope we won't be caught

Me: It will take at least 2-3 days for Carol to realize that we missing and by then i hope we will be gone

CJ: so where are we going?

Me: Thailand

CJ: sounds interesting

Me: It does

He leaned against the car..

Me: Why ain't you asking if Theresa is going to join us?

CJ: because she is not.. told me she is going away again

Me: I know this seems a bit off but trust me all that she is doing, she is doing for you guys

CJ: that's what she always says

Me: Why don't you wake your sister up so we go in and get something to eat?

CJ: cool

I dropped the cigarette on the ground and stepped on it to put it out..

.

.

THERESA

When the hospital staff was let in on what happened that incident of me waking up wet and with my bed dripping wet too, the Dr was convinced that there might've been an intruder last night that might have tried to abduct me. I knew very what happened but i went with his theory the last thing i want is to tell my dream and then sound crazy

Advertisement

then have them lock me up..

Faith was in my ward, she was with the guy who saved my life that night. The Nurse had changed the bedding and i was given a dry hospital gown to wear..

Faith: how are you?

Me: I was scared but now i am fine

She looked at Zaine, and then Zaine looked at me..

Zaine: Let me formally introduce myself. My Name is Zaine Radebe, Prophet Zaine Radebe.

Faith: most powerful Prophet of this lifetime

I was astonished he looks a bit young to be a Prophet, i am used to Prophets being a bit older..

Me: Wow a Prophet? That wouldn't have been my first thought

Him: i get that a lot don't worry

Faith: You are blessed to be in his presence i promise you

Me: i can tell i am very honoured

Zaine: glad that i didn't have to hide my identity anymore

Me: hide your identity?

Zaine: long story

Faith: with the dream that you had Theresa i am afraid that the time is upon us i will have to ask the Dr to discharge you so that we can start with everything

I looked at Zaine..

Me: i guess you also going to help?

Zaine: unfortunately i won't, i just came to make sure that you alright

Faith: Prophet Zaine is the most powerful young Prophet of this lifetime, but for this war you going to need the greatest Prophet of this lifetime

Me: Huh?

Zaine chuckled..

Zaine: you going to need a Prophet that is more experienced with the dark world, one who has fought against such evil once to save his wife from her family of diplomatic witches

Me: dark world? That sounds scary

Zaine: have no fear

Faith: Where is he? He should be here by now

Some gentleman walked in..

Him: i am here

He looked a bit older than Zaine. He was wearing a suit, he looked very handsome you couldn't even tell that he is a Prophet you would think that he is a rich businessman..

As he made his way in the atmosphere changed it confirmed that heaven had walked in, having two powerful Prophets under one roof crumbled the whole place...

Him: Faith

Faith: Prophet Badru

Badru: Prophet Zaine

Zaine: Prophet Badru

He looked at me..

Him: My dear

I didn't know what to say i was just frozen..

Him: I would give you a handshake but I don't want you falling off from the bed you seem a bit physically hurt

Faith: he has that effect his hand cannot touch you and not let you feel the anointing

Me: uhm wow

I wondered to myself that I must be really important to God for him to take out these big guns for me, but why? I am just a typical girl who was working as a cleaner there's nothing special about me. I don't pray, i don't even know any Bible verses i have spent most of my life exchanging sexual favours for money, there's truly nothing special about me. There's more deserving people than me, better Christians than me that God could've chosen..

Badru: Never doubt yourself you are very powerful and more important than you think

I looked at him..

Me: Pardon?

Badru: don't ever think less of yourself if you weren't soo important you wouldn't be here right now

Me: Just that... I have always been use.. I mean i have always been made to feel useless

Badru: 1 Corinthians 4 vs 10 "For christ's sake we are fools; but you are wise in union with Christ! We are weak, but you are strong! We are despised, but you are honored!" don't ever think less of yourself because God thought highly of you when he brought forth your existence. You can be a fool in the world it's fine why should you care anyway? You not of this world what is wisdom in the world is actually foolishness in the eyes of the Lord, rather seek wisdom from the one above than in the world.

Zaine: Never think less of yourself at least respect the one who gave you life, Heaven has favoured you look two Prophets are in your presence right now shouldn't that show you how important you are?

Faith: and it's not just typical Prophets.. Your existence is very precious and special Theresa start believing

Those words were very emotional but i still don't understand..who am i to have heaven honour me like this?

THERESA

I was discharged that same day there was no longer time to waste anymore, my mission was getting closer and i need all the training and help that I could get from all those who are spiritually mature. I couldn't wait to be done with it, Yes a part of me was a bit scared i mean what happens if the serpent defeats me? I don't wanna die and leave my siblings. I was to find temporary shelter at St Luther ministries just until everything is done. I wish that this could also bring me closer to God i would really like to know more about him after what he has done for me my perception about him has changed, i was too quick to judge him. All these years i have been mad at him and he was not the enemy he has never been the enemy..

I had left my quarters where i was supposed to be resting since i got here an hour ago but i had no sleep in me, there's no longer time to sleep. I was at the church, i was kneeling down at the alter trying to find the right words to say to God. I don't know how to pray, prayer has never been my strongest point i always found it useless there were a few times i prayed back then when my Mother was on her death bed. I prayed for God to heal her, i needed her to be better because i was young i didn't see myself coping in raising two kids on my own when i was a kid myself. I prayed with tears streaming down and a

broken heart but the following day my Mother passed on and that is when I didn't want nothing to do with God i didn't wanna have any communication with him because whatever i prayed for the opposite happened....

The door opened as i was struggling to find the right words to say to God, i heard footsteps approaching the alter..

Voice: Dear

It was Father Luther..

Father: I hope that i am not interrupting

I got up..

Me: No Father you not

We went to sit down on the bench..

I looked at the cross that was hanging of Jesus'crucifixion..

Me: To think that someone once went through such a painful experience it's heartbreaking

Father: Have you experienced the stigmata recently?

Me: No i haven't

Father: How are you feeling now?

Me: I am fine thank you

Father: i am glad to hear that

Me: i was trying to pray

Father: did you?

I shook my head no..

Father: why? What happened?

Me: I don't know how to pray, i couldn't find the right words

Father: You know that when you reading your Bible that's God talking to you. You actually listening and he is talking, and when you praying that's you talking to God. He is listening while you do all the talking.

Me: i never saw it that way

Father: so there's no "right" words when you talking to him always say what is in your heart, even if words fail you and you start crying that is prayer because God and only him he understands the language of tears.

Me: After all this experience will i be forced to be a Christian? Because Religion is a fight that we can never win there's too much debate surrounding it

Father: deep down what do you want?

Me: I just wanna know more about God i wanna know how i can grow spiritually and i wanna know how to strengthen our

relationship especially when storms come my way. I tend to lose my faith in him when I face difficulties

Father: what's in the heart matters more than anything to God and when it comes to religion we cannot despise a certain religion because of two or three people who don't know the true essence of Religion. Just because there's two or three Christians that aren't doing things right doesn't mean all Christians are like that. Remember Theresa not everyone who goes to church is gonna go to heaven, not everyone who shouts God! God! God! Is sincere sometimes the devil misleads even God's children look at what happened with Judas iscariot

Me: He betrayed Jesus

Father: All I am going to say is fix your eyes in the Lord and forget about who does what let it be you and God, not you and what other people are doing.

Me: that's true

Father: we will help you don't worry

Me: I still don't know why I was chosen for such a big mission

Father: have you ever heard of King David?

Me: a little

Father: When God rejected Saul as King of Israel he sent Samuel to a man called Jesse, God told Samuel to take olive oil and go

to Jesse's house because there he has chosen one of Jesse's sons to be a king. Samuel did what the Lord told him and went to Bethlehem to Jesse's house. When Samuel arrived he saw Jesse's son Eliab and said to himself "This man standing here in the Lord's Presence is surely the one he has chosen" but the Lord said to him "Pay no attention to how tall and handsome he is. I have rejected him, because i do not judge as people judge. They look at the outward appearance, but i look at the heart"

Me: i don't understand why you telling me this Father

Father: I am telling you this because people might judge you outside there, they will judge you with your past and present mistakes. They will see you unfit to carry out such a mission but God has long looked at your heart and i have no doubt that he has made the right choice, you have a very pure heart Theresa and that has always connected you to heaven even when you didn't want anything to do with God but here you are now. God is patient and he waited for you, i guess all the waiting is over because you have answered to his call and i am honoured to be a part of your journey. Your past doesn't matter, who you were doesn't matter to God

Advertisement

your mistakes don't matter to him what matters is the current you. What matters is where you go from here and what you do

from here since your eyes have been opened to what is good and what is evil.

When he finished speaking tears were already burning my eyes..

Father: you not alone and you have never been alone you have a family of Angels that have always been here waiting for you all these years

Me: Nimueh?

Father: a whole lot of them

He stood up..

Father: Come on you need to rest while we wait for Faith

Me: Where is she?

Father: she has gone somewhere

I stood up and went to my quarters.

All of what was said was still trying to register in my heart, it was an emotional revelation i have never felt like this before about God, and i will forever be in debt to those who have opened my eyes to such a wonderful creator...

I got to my quarters and tried to turn the light on but it didn't turn on, I went to get the candle from the shelf when i heard a groaning sound behind me. I had no doubt that something or

someone was behind me i did feel something like a presence following me when i got out of church to my quarters. I turned around slowly and what I saw scared me that i even dropped the candle and screamed..

.

.

CALVIN

After the long drive we finally arrived at the cabin in the woods Sterling did follow the instructions very well, the cabin was up to standard. It was two bedrooms, bathroom, the living room and the kitchen occupied the same area. It was small and very perfect there was even woods next to the fire place we had no tv but i am sure that our gadgets will keep us busy. I had bought a new laptop and a new phone that won't be traceable because i am not planning on calling anyone, if i wanna call Sterling i will use a pay phone..

Me: so what do you guys think?

CJ: for how long are we going to be staying here?

Me: not that long

We went to put our things in the bedrooms..

Me: Come on guys we going to have soo much fun here

They didn't say anything..

CJ took his laptop and went to sit on the couch, Zerra followed him..

Me: Ill come and prepare the fire place for you guys

I took out some of my clothes to put them on the shelf i find packing them in the shelf more convenient..

I heard a voice talking that went around the room..

Voice: "you can run but you cannot hide, at least not from me"

.

.

FAITH

I was traveling to Cape Town to see Kimbella who is known to us as Angel Phoenix, Kimbella was the very first Angel to live as a human being on earth. She was an Angel of love & peace and sometime she fell victim to the dark world, she was once captured by an evil entity known as "Pandora". Pandora turned her evil, she lived on earth and tortured innocent souls. But because Kimbella was an Angel and didn't belong on earth, Heaven decided that she should be placed in Purgatory forever but her family of angels didn't wanna lose her so the innocence of the Angels and their tears outweighed her sins she was then given a second chance she was never sent to Purgatory. Though

she was forgiven but she was never allowed back in heaven because evil once embedded in her heart and also she was no longer pure, she has had physical contact with a human being so she had to live here on earth as a human being. Her wings were never clipped, she still has interaction with heaven and the angels but she should never reveal her true self to any human being other than her family, The Prophets, and the chosen ones.. I am going to see Kimbella so that she can help me and stand with me in overturning the decision of Theresa having to go away after her mission, i believe Theresa deserves to have happiness and love restored to her. I believe she deserves to have a beautiful life here on earth with her siblings and Calvin, she deserves to have what her heart desires. If Theresa was like any other Angel she wasn't going to be allowed to dwell in heaven as she is no longer pure and has her heart stolen by a human being, she was going to live here on earth but with her it's different Theresa is the guardian of the waters. As soon as she gets in there, the water will cleanse her so that she can be pure again..

40

THERESA

I was very traumatized at what i saw, It was a tall dark figure with horns that looked extremely scary. It looked very deformed and it was groaning and also making unusual sounds while it stepped towards me, i was stepping backwards while still screaming. When i came in contact with the wall it raised its hand and hit me across the face, i fell. It only disappeared when one of the sisters came in together with Father Luther i swear i have never been this scared in my whole entire life before..

When i had settled the Sister went to fetch a small basin that had warm water, an antiseptic, and a towel. I had a scratch across my face were the entity had hit me..

It was more of a scratching effect than a typical slap, i felt its claws taking a piece of my skin when they came in contact with my face..

I was still trembling while i sat on the bed such things you only hear about them, you only hear that they exist but never in a million years did i think i would see one with a naked eye.. The sister started cleaning my scratch with the antiseptic and the towel.

Me: What was it?

Father: I believe that you might've come in contact with the devil

Me: How? I mean he looked different from how he was when he was Calvin

Father: He can take any form that he wants but i believe you might've seen his true self, even in your dream he appeared as a serpent.

Me: Why? Why did he come now i am not ready!

Father: to him that doesn't matter, he knows how vulnerable you are now and he is targeting you so that he can get the upper hand he wants you weak so he can win

Me: but i am in a sacred place isn't the compound and the church protected?

Father: Theresa sometimes when you still own things that belong to the devil it's very difficult for him to let you go in your case you still own Anger, Hate, and fear. You had sexual contact with him while he possessed Calvin's body he still considers you his territory

Me: how do we break that connection?

Father: Romans 10 verse 8-9 "God's message is near you, on your lips and in your heart. That is, the message of faith that we preach. If you confess that Jesus is Lord and believe that God

raised him from death, you will be saved" you have to accept Jesus as your Lord and Saviour and you will be saved from the hand of the devil, then you will be the child of God. Also tomorrow morning before the sun comes up we have to embark on a journey to the blessed waters you will have to walk into the waters completely naked and let the water cleanse your body, let the waters cleanse your body from the sexual encounter you had with the devil when the sun comes up you will make your way out of the waters. The sun will represent the new you, you will be a new creation on a new day the old Theresa would be gone. A dove will fly across the sky signifying your pureness and that heaven and the Angels consider you as one of their own, and then you will still stand against the devil with courage.

I kept on nodding repeatedly..

Father: But we cannot force you to do everything, it has to come from your heart that you truly want to take this step

I closed my eyes for a few seconds, i allowed peace to interact with my soul and my mind. When my mind, soul, and heart were in sync i knew that this is my destiny, this is how God has purposed for me to live and to acknowledge his presence. I opened My eyes and looked at Father Luther.

Me: I am ready to accept Jesus as my Lord and saviour

Father: Let's go to the alter

He walked out first and i looked at the Sister..

Me: Thank you Sister

Her: you are a very courageous girl and i have no doubt that you will carry out this mission i have no doubt that you will come out stronger

Me: Thank you

Her: Let's go Father Luther is waiting

The Sister stood up and we went to the church. When walked in Father Luther was not alone he was with the Nuns..

Father: Come child

The Sister went to join the Nuns while i made my way to the alter to Father Luther, he was wearing his clerical collar. I was wearing my night gown and i had no shoes on..

I got to the alter and knelt down before him..

Father: Please raise your hands

I raised both of my hands up..

Father: Raising your hands is you surrendering to the Lord, you basically saying Lord i have been in charge of my life but now i surrender all to you and ask you to be the one who takes charge of my life from here on..

I nodded..

Him: Close your eyes and repeat this words after me

I closed my eyes..

Him: I, Theresa Mendoza.

Me: I, Theresa Mendoza.

Him: Confess with my mouth that Jesus christ is the Lord

Me: Confess with my mouth that Jesus christ is the Lord

Him: I believe in my heart that God raised him from the dead

Me: I believe in my heart that God raised him from the dead

Him: I accept him as my Lord and Saviour

Me: I accept him as my Lord and Saviour

Him: Therefore i am saved

Me: Therefore i am saved

I opened my eyes and saw a bright light shining in from the ceiling and brightening the whole room

Advertisement

there was such peacefulness, joy, and love. I heard voices singing in harmony father Luther smiled at me..

I stood up and turned around i couldn't believe what i saw, the whole room was filled with Angels they were holding candles and singing in harmony i was very emotional, i have never seen something soo beautiful....

I felt honoured, for a change i wasn't mocked, i wasn't put down but heaven was honouring me..

I turned and looked at Father Luther..

Me: Is it always like this when one accepts the Lord?

Father: When a sinner repents and accepts Jesus as their Lord and Saviour Heaven rejoices, while hell weeps..

I turned and looked at the Angels again, i couldn't believe it they also had beautiful smiles.

Father: Not everyone is made to see such beauty you are indeed special Theresa

I couldn't stop the tears of joy from falling..

Father: You should go and rest now peacefully knowing that you are heavenly protected, no harm will come to you..

.

.

CALVIN

The kids and i had a great night we cooked together even though neither of us were great cooks, but it wasn't about the cooking it was about us spending time together and it was about them feeling comfortable in this new environment...

After eating dinner we played a few board games and then called it a night, CJ and Zerra preferred Sharing a room together and i was going to occupy the other bedroom alone..

It was around 00:00am and i was on my laptop searching a few things when i heard cries, i had no doubt that they were arising from hell. The cries were soo sharp that they pierced through my eardrums and i bled from my ears, literally bled..

I closed my laptop and covered my ears with my hands...

Lucifer: Bu Calvin Barca ödəyəcək!!! (you will pay for this Calvin Barca)

I heard his voice going around the room, things were falling. I also heard Zerra screaming..

Me: Zerra!!!!

I heard things breaking in other rooms too it was a mess, i got out of bed but i felt light headed and i collapsed..

.

.

THERESA

I was sleeping peacefully when I was woken up by a dark feeling, i raised my head from the pillow and looked around my quarters i was alone, funny i wasn't scared but i felt that my loved ones were in danger.. I then heard a soft voice..

"Beloved... "

I looked around to see who it was but i didn't see anyone..

"Beloved..."

I looked around again..

Me: I am here.. I can hear you

"Beloved find the voice deep within you that connects you and Nimueh, because of what you did today Nimueh has finally been restored. Summon her, She is always ready to serve you. Address her as a sister she will hear you, she will listen to you, and she will serve you"

After the voice has spoken i got out of bed and made my way outside, it was a bit chilly, a cold breeze hit my skin. I went to an open space it was very quiet, i closed my eyes to find the voice within me that connects me with Nimueh. The Holy Spirit became one with my spirit to give my voice authority and give me strength to summon Nimueh..

I took a deep breath and looked up in the sky..

Me: Nimueh!!!!!!!!!! you deialdia dut nire presentzia sartu une honetan!!!!

I opened my eyes and looked around.

After a while I saw her flying across the sky she came down to me and knelt before me with one leg.. I once saw her true form but this time around she looked a bit different, her wings were more bigger her sword was powerful too..

Nimueh: deitu didazu

Me: My Siblings are in danger!! I command you to go and protect them, fight off any evil that came their way. For i am a new creation, through me those i love will always be protected.

She stood up and bowed her head, she then flew away..

THERESA

In the early hours of the morning we set out to the blessed waters, it was still dawn and still a bit chilly. Father Luther said that i must get in the waters before the sun comes out and that when it comes out, it will represent a new me i will be a new creation after today. I was taking the trip with Father Luther, Nimueh, and a female pastor known as pastor Lethu. Pastor Lethu unlike Prophet Zaine, and Prophet Badru she is not gifted to see what is in the spiritual world i was told that she is very powerful when it comes to praying and she is very invested in the work of the Lord. Only i and Father Luther we were able to see Nimueh because now she was her true self, she has taken the form of being an Angel. Pastor Lethu Zulu was called because Father Luther felt it would be inappropriate to see me naked, so Pastor Lethu will be the one who was going to be present with me as i make my in and out of the waters..

Lethu: Are you ready?

Me: Yes i am ready

Father: How did you sleep last night?

Me: I had a good night sleep i won't lie

Father: the devil has finally left you alone what's left is for you to defeat him and put him beneath you were he belongs

Lethu: You have already won Theresa all you have to do is to believe in yourself

I never thought for a second that one day my life would change i mean i feel soo complete. Lately i haven't been taking my medication too but it doesn't show, i believe that when faith healed me at the hospital she did away with this evil disease that tortured my body.. I am truly grateful for this second chance that the Lord has given me, being a child of God triumphs money and earthly riches. I am at peace that i found God at my worst because now i know that a fulfilled life circles around delighting in the presence of the Lord at all times than chasing earthly riches.....

We arrived at the sacred place, the chauffeur parked not very far from the blessed waters. It was nothing fancy just mountains, white soil, the waters and trees. It was a peaceful place though, stepping out of the car and putting my feet on the ground i could feel that the waters were calling me..

Father: This is it Theresa now unfortunately i can't get any closer but Pastor Lethu is here and she will guide you. Remember when you get inside the waters relax, let it be you who guides the waters let the waters obey you

Me: Yes Father

Lethu: are you ready?

Me: i am

She held my hand and we made our way to the waters....

Nimueh was up in the sky standing guard with her powerful sword incase any evil might wanna invade.

The waters were quiet and peaceful a mist engulfed the top of the waters.

Pastor Lethu stood a bit closer, she lifted her hands up to the waters and started praying i closed my eyes and waited for her to finish, when she was done she looked at me..

Lethu: You can go inside

Me: i have to go deep inside?

Lethu: Yes

Me: won't i drown?

Lethu: No you won't

The last thing i want is to go in and then i drown..

Lethu: you must go exactly in the heart of the water, it's right there in the middle

I nodded and took my clothes off until i was naked, i slowly made my way into the water. At first they were very cold, i was shivering..

Lethu: Remember you own the waters you can tell them anything and they will listen to your command

I closed my eyes and found that inner voice but unlike with Nimueh i didn't have to say anything verbally

Advertisement

i just had to communicate with the waters from deep within. As i proceeded the waters accommodated me into achieving the right temperature for my body, i felt like they were accepting me like i belonged there..

I walked in with my eyes closed until i sunk in deeper and deeper into the heart of the waters. I was very surprised to be deep underneath and not drowning, i could open my eyes and clearly see i could breath without water sipping into my lungs..

"Urieh..."

The sweet harmonies of the waters called out..

"Urieh.. "

I looked around and the waters were clear, they were very pure. I looked at myself and I was glowing like a clear crystal.

" Urieh.. "

I didn't know that name, i wasn't familiar with it..

"Step your foot in the very heart of the waters Urieh"

If only you could hear the waters speaking you would be in awe, their voices were beautiful something i have never heard before..

Both my feet touched the bottom heart of the waters and a bright white light arose from underneath and circled me...

"You are blessed.. You are Pure.. You are undefeated.. You are Urieh the goddess, the Angel, and the guardian of the blessed waters"

I saw a chain around my neck, the pendant had a small glass that was filled with water inside of it..

"When all seems lost.. When you feel defeated.. When you feel hopeless... The waters in the chain will stand with you, call us in the time of need we will be there.. We only wanna serve you Urieh"

After that i was lifted up to the surface of the waters, i don't know how to swim but i was floating..

I saw Pastor Lethu standing there she now had a white dress for me..

I made my out of the waters and the sun started coming out, shinning brighter than it was supposed to be. I looked up in the sky and i saw a lot of doves flying around...

I made way out with a voice coming down to me from the sky...

"You are a new creation Beloved.."

I knew the heavens had accepted me, i knew that i belonged somewhere..

I got to Pastor Lethu..

Lethu: Well done Theresa

I was still wearing the chain..

She handed me a towel first.

I was still trying to process why the waters kept on calling me "Urieh" i was still trying to process why they called me the guardian of them...

.

.

CALVIN

After the scenario last night i decided that it would be a good gesture if i could take the kids out for breakfast, i mean i owe them that much..

We were all still very much surprised at the events that took place, things flying around and then later on things going back to their normal peaceful state. Well I wasn't surprised because I am familiar with the events but the kids are not...

We were at some Diner it was wasn't in town but it was pretty close, we were wearing disguises as always and having breakfast..

CJ: do you think the Cabin is haunted?

Me: i don't wanna believe that

Zerra: it was scary last night

Me: I know sweetheart and im sorry

I wish Theresa could finish with her mission so that she can have the kids, i don't think they are safe with me anymore..

.

.

FAITH

I Finally arrived at Kimbella's place it was good to see her again and she welcomed me warmly. We don't see much of Kimbella, because we are all situated in different places..

Kim: It's good to see you Dina

Me: It's good to see you too you still beautiful and it's like you don't age

She laughed..

Me: where is little Joy?

Her: she is not so little anymore

I sat down..

Her: would you like something to drink? Or would you like to rest i am sure you must be exhausted

Me: i will be fine

Her: so what brings you here so far away?

Me: I need to talk to you

Her: about?

Me: we have another Angel here on earth

Her: Who?

Me: Urieh but here she goes by the name of Theresa

Her eyes widened..

Her: what? She is here on earth living like a human?

Me: Yes

Her: who would've thought i mean if she is here then what about the waters?

Me: that's why i am here. Urieh cannot go to the waters she belongs here

Her: that's not for you to decide though, that's for heaven to decide

Me: If all angels could..

She shook her head no..

Me: Kimbella listen

Her: Faith you cannot change her destiny

Me: Kimbella i am not asking you, as a high priestess i am commanding you

Her: you come here to my house and do this? How dare you abuse your authority that you have over angels like this?

Me: when true love is involved i cannot deny after all love triumphs everything

I stood up..

Me: Please show me to the bedroom i would like to rest now

No matter what she does she cannot disobey the word of a high priestess.

42

[THERESA'S JOURNEY-P1]

CALVIN

ONE WEEK LATER

I am sure that by now one would think that me and the kids did skip the country and that we are sailing away in some island drinking a fruit cocktail punch and waiting for Theresa to finish with her mission so that she can come and join us, that would be a perfect ending to a story in a perfect world but not in reality. Things got extremely worse for me, i was a wanted man. When authorities learned about my criminal offenses a reward was put out, i was a wanted man who had kidnapped two minors. I was said to be "Dangerous & armed". I was on posters, Tv, flyers, news papers i was made to be a very notorious criminal. Sway really went all out to get me and the reward was R150 000, which made it harder for us to even go to town incase we get spotted. Sterling was the one who made endless trips to the cabin, he would bring us food and everything we needed but then again it wasn't safe. Sterling is my right hand man so it came to a point where his movements were tailed and he couldn't come anymore. It was really hard i won't lie, i couldn't let the kids live like this i couldn't let them live like Animals it wasn't right and worse there was no way out. Even if we got the passports but we would never gonna

cross the boarder we were confined in the cabin and that wasn't a life, not one that the kids should live...

I ended up doing what was right, i turned myself in and the kids were taken away. I truly have tried, i have tried to protect them but the devil got me where he wanted me and i had to let them go. I had to let things be..I can say the only crucial case that authorities had against me was kidnapping, but the tempered opioid there wasn't much of a case with it because no cocaine was found in my company that implicated me to the sabotaged opioid. Yes many opioids were tested from some of the Private practices that i supply but still Sway had to prove that the opioid was tempered with from my company and he won't be able to prove that. I can get my lawyer to overturn this situation and make it seem like i was sabotaged or that the private practices is the one at fault..

Sway lit up another cigarette puffing in a way to gloat that he has got me where he wants me..

Sway: It's over..

He picked up the mug from the table that contained strong black coffee..

Sway: you know where you going from hereon? To hell! To see the devil

I was sitting across him in handcuffs..

Me: trust me i vacation there and i am the devil

He chuckled...

Sway: You think this is a game?

I leaned forward and put my hands on the table..

Me: Sway we have been here for 6 hours what exactly are you trying to get out of me?

Sway: just confess!!!

Me: Confess to what?

Sway: you have been spiking your drug with cocaine!

Me: that's your theory

He stood up and opened a file then threw a few pictures on the table, he came to me and put his hand around my neck while drawing one picture close to my face..

Sway: Look at her!! Look at her!! She was fucken 16 years old! She was an A student, who unfortunately was diagnosed with cancer! She was using your opioid drug to releave pain and you know what happened? She was found dead in her bedroom from an overdose!

He put the picture down and then let go of me..

Sway: you have just robbed an innocent girl her life! Her parents will never wake up anymore to the sound of her voice, all because of you Barca!! All because of how ruthless you are!

He went and got his mug..

Sway: you think about it!!!

He walked to the door..

Me: i would like to call my lawyer now

Sway: fuck you!

.

.

THERESA

A full week had passed and still my mission was not carried out, i was becoming very impatient because i really need to get out of here. We don't have Tv around here but I read the newspaper and Calvin is in a lot of trouble with the law, i cannot believe he tried to skip the country with my siblings and now they have been taken away to a foster home.

This i didn't sign up for, i didn't sign up to have my Siblings taken away..

I was in my quarters late that night with Faith

Prophet Badru, and Father Luther they wanted to talk to me about something. It's time they talk to me, i also have a lot of questions for them..

Faith: I assume you have questions for us

Me: Yes i do and i would really like it If everyone present here could answer me honestly

Luther: of course

Me: When i went to the blessed waters to be cleansed they addressed me as Urieh and since from then every night when i am sleeping i hear them calling out to me asking for my help. They called me their guardian, i don't understand what's happening

They looked at each before saying anything..

Faith: i think it's time now that you know the truth

Me: what truth?

Faith: Theresa you..the waters addressed you as Urieh because that's who you are, You are Angel Urieh the guardian of the blessed waters, the goddess of the blessed waters

That wasn't registering..

Me: an Angel?

Badru: Blessed waters is a sacred place, those waters have to remain pure at all times because they hold great significance and carry out an important task. It is a place where most find healing, it's a place where most baptisms are done in order to keep the waters pure like that they need a guardian and not just any guardian but one that has a pure heart

Me: What you saying doesn't make sense! Angels are not born i am a human being always have been and i was born by a human being

Faith: You are right Angels are created and not born but The guardian of the blessed waters has always been unique. The waters choose the existence of their guardian, they always choose one that has a pure heart. The waters chose you ever since you were very young. Guardians of the waters are the only Angels that are not created but born and only chosen because of their pure heart. The reason why you weren't let in on who you are earlier was to see if truly you had a pure heart and you did that's why the devil has been becoming at you like this because he didn't want you to take your place in the waters he wants the blessed waters all to himself so that he can use them for evil purposes that's why he had been preventing you to answer to your calling. Theresa you are not the first Guardian of the waters and you won't be the last, many will be chosen after you.

Me: what will happen to me in the long run? Don't i live forever?

Badru: No you still a human being, you still mortal

I exhaled this wasn't making sense..

Badru: Theresa i never woke up one day and chose to be a Prophet i had my own aspirations, but being a Prophet was my destiny it was what i was intended to be. When you realize your destiny no one can change it, not even the devil he may bring about different obstacles to prevent you from fulfilling your destiny but your destiny is your destiny and no one can ever take it away from you

Me: It's impossible it cannot be i am only human

Badru: who said human beings are useless? Remember you were created to be superior over anything and everything, you are inferior only to God. You are God's perfect creation, your complete perfection lacks only because of the invasion of Sin you something that the devil cannot create, something that the devil cannot achieve. You were created in God's image and likeness, when hell sees you they see God and that's why hell will dedicate all eternity in trying to destroy the relationship that God has with his children. You are not limited to anything Theresa then why are you doubting that the waters chose you?

Faith: The serpent has invaded the blessed waters, the waters are troubled there's no tranquility your mission has finally come. The serpent has drew you closer to your home he wants to fight you in his territory when you win not only will you be saving the waters but also you will be saving Calvin from the devil that has tormented him all these years and used him to break you

Badru: after you have defeated the serpent a code that has to be burnt will be revealed to you and that is the code that once connected Calvin and the serpent together, once the code has been destroyed; when the serpent whispers Calvin will not answer because the code would've been destroyed they will no longer have a way of communicating

Faith: When you stand against the serpent and defeat it, there's a great chance that you might not come back. There's a great chance that you will stay in the waters and guard the waters as it is intended because that is your destiny.

CALVIN

The devil will always make sin seem so enjoyable while you doing it, you will enjoy it so much that it's gonna seem to be worth it at that time. You will only care about what happens at that certain period of time and never give thought to what could happen tomorrow..

There i was Calvin Barca, a multimillionaire bachelor who could eat out any heart of a woman. People respected me, people feared me, and people worshiped the ground that i walked on nothing could ever touch me. I enjoyed that life more than anything but i didn't realize that there's only one true God, and it definitely wasn't the one that I was serving. The devil will make you sin, the devil will help you sin, but when your sin catches up with you he leaves you. All that i had become over the years, all that i had achieved over the years disappeared like a puff of smoke in the air. Tonight i am alone in this cold cell thinking about what i could've done differently. All the respect i got has turned into hate and i am facing the music alone while the one who played the music for me is no longer here to turn it off.. I am sure Theresa has read the papers and i have no doubt that she hates me, i have disappointed her a lot of times. I felt all alone like i had no one, i don't even feel like calling my lawyer i don't wanna fight off the case. I am not even

going to request for bail, there's nothing left for me outside there..

The bars opened disturbing my deep thinking, i sat up straight and it was Sway.

Sway: not cosy is it?

He walked in and stood in the middle of the room while glancing down at me..

Me: I will give you a confession

He kept quiet probably analyzing my statement..

Sway: Why the change of heart now?

Me: it's the right thing to do

Sway: It has to be more than that you have one of the best lawyers on your side, you could easily fight off this case and win nothing has ever defeated Barca why are you throwing in the towel?

Me: Like i said it's the right thing to do

Sway: You know i can make all of this go away even your case for kidnapping it won't even go to court you could walk out of here a free man any day

Me: what's the condition?

Sway: You know what i want you know what i am expecting

Me: Sway i am not going to work for you as a drug Lord!

Sway: First of all keep your voice down, why don't you want? You had an opioid drug that contained cocaine you distributed it for many years covering your tracks perfectly this will be just a piece of cake for you

Me: I would never do anything for you

Sway: you killed my parents you owe me that much!

Me: Your Father attacked my Parents! Your Father forced me into the drug world while i was just a little boy and then later on my little Brother died

Sway: he wasn't doing anything that your coke head parents weren't doing already, my Father made you who you are today! You used those skills to make yourself rich by selling a drug legally that contained an illegal substance without even getting caught

Me: You can leave now Sway

I wasn't going to take him up on this offer, i just got out from the Devil's grip and i am not going to sell my soul again to another devil...

.

.

THERESA

It is wrong what's happening, it is very wrong. Why was i chosen? Couldn't the waters see how much responsibility i carried? The waters couldn't see that my Mother passed on leaving me to look after my siblings? The waters couldn't take into consideration that if i do this my Siblings will be going from home to home like abandoned Orphans? It was not fair that the waters would choose me and leave me with this unbearable pain.

I wish things could be different, i wish things didn't work out this way it's not right, it is not right at all..

Do you know the pain of being separated from the ones that you love knowing that you will never see them again? It's something that you will never get over.. How will my siblings cope with my sudden disappearance? How will Cal cope?

I was kneeling down and praying with tears falling down..

Me: God i understand that your ways are beyond mine

Advertisement

i understand that i shouldn't question your will. If my destiny is for me to leave my loved ones and guard the waters i would do so, but know i will be a very unhappy guardian after all i am just a mere human being and there's certain painful things that do not easily go away. Me having to leave the ones that i hold

close to my heart, that pain will certainly not go away. I understand that the guardian of the waters is one with a pure heart, but my heart is carrying a lot of heaviness and i don't know how that is going to work.. Amen

That was a very different prayer from how i usually pray, i felt like pouring out my heart to him than a human being because only God would understand the depth of my sorrow..

Someone knocked..

I got up and sat on my bed while wiping my tears.

Me: Come in

The door opened and Faith walked in, Faith has soo much knowledge that at times i forget she's young..

Faith: Just by walking in i can already feel the pain and sorrow in the atmosphere

Me: Kind of hard to accept my destiny

Faith: I know how difficult this is for you and believe me tonight all Angels will gather and try to stand by you, they will try to reason and make heaven see that you belong here you belong to be with your Siblings and Calvin. You have been through soo much Theresa and God being the God of restoration i wish all that the devil stole could be returned to you. The love that you

were robbed off as a child i wish it could be restored, i wish to see you happy and your heart at peace

Me: I wish so too but the waters need me, i cannot allow many people to suffer because of the fact that the waters have been stained knowing that i could've done something to stop it but i didn't.

My necklace started glowing..

Faith: indeed you do have a pure heart Theresa

Me: at what time are we leaving tomorrow morning?

Faith: We are going to leave at dawn

Me: I should rest

She put her hand on my cheek..

Faith: whatever happens tomorrow i hope the results would be beneficial for you

Me: we can only just hope

Faith: That's true you can lose everything in your life but never lose faith. Just like Abraham believe even if you see no point of believing anymore

She stood up..

Faith: i will leave you to rest

Me: thank you

She walked out and i went to lock, i sank down to the floor while crying morning is approaching my destiny is getting closer and i will never see the ones that i love ever again.. I was trying to be strong but deep down i was breaking, i will not see Cal too the only man who has ever shown me true love. Though our union was short but we felt something very deep for each other, something that no one could ever understand but God..

Me: God please lift off this task from me it is very heavy for me to carry out (crying)

I hugged my legs while sobbing, i understand what Faith said. She told me to believe but this situation is impossible to believe in, how do i believe that Cal and i can be if this is my destiny. This is what i have been intended to be just like Badru said, nothing can change your destiny other than the one who laid it down for you.. I am trying to believe, i am trying to have faith but it all seems impossible..

Me: but i believe that even if we cannot be together in this life, i believe that in the next life if such exists we will be together again

I then saw a bright light shining through into my room from the ceiling. It was soo bright that it gave the whole room light..

.

.

CALVIN

When the judge decides my faith in court and then i get locked up for a very long time, i will never ever see Theresa ever again. I don't want her to even come and see me, i don't wanna put her through more pain than i already have. All i wish for now is that i was given time to say goodbye to her, It is not fair that we have to be separated this way..

Me: I believe that one day we will be together maybe in the next lifetime if not this one

As i was laying there, after saying those words i saw a light shinning through from the ceiling into the cell. It was very bright that it gave the whole cell light..

44

[THERESA'S FINAL JOURNEY]

44

THERESA

As dawn finally approached we made our way to the blessed waters at this point i didn't know how i felt, i was very numb. I spent the whole night crying and praying hoping that today i was gonna wake up to a different response, but everything was still the same. I took the journey only with Faith and Nimueh, the rest remained at St Luther Ministries to pray for me. I was just greatly worried about my Siblings, how are they going to take into my disappearance? Especially CJ i made a promise to him that i will never leave again when i am done with this mission. He is going to spend his whole life resenting me..

I just hope that wherever they are they living comfortably, i hope they feel at home that is all i want for them to be safe and live a good life. I hope Calvin beats the case too a part of me understands that he thought he was doing what was best for the kids even though it brought about unfortunate results. I hope that he finds a woman that will make him happy some day. I want my departure to at least bring about peace and happiness to those i hold dear to my heart.....

Faith and i looked at the waters..

Faith: This is it

The waters weren't welcoming anymore, they didn't seem like they had life in them. They were very dirty and they had an unpleasant smell, i promise you if the smell made it into your nose strills you would faint, it was that bad..

Me: This is bad

Faith: The waters are literally dead there's no life in them the serpent has been under there for at least 3 days now

Me: how will i survive under there?

Faith: The serpent feeds off fear don't show him fear, don't show him weakness. He is not greater than you always remember that, he is beneath you. He will remind you of your past and your mistakes, remind him of his future.

I took a deep breath and then exhaled...

Nimueh took her place as always flying through and around the top surface of the waters.

Faith: are you ready?

Me: I have no choice

She nodded with a smile..

I slowly approached the waters, i was wearing a long white dress and i still had my chain around my neck..

As i got in closer i could feel how cold the waters were, they were still stinking. I looked up and Nimueh was still there, the skies were clear..

I went in deeper and deeper, i had to get to the heart of the waters were the serpent was taking his place and owning the waters.....

When i was deep underneath i opened my eyes and started breathing, i could breath and i could see. Maybe it's because deep down in the depths of my heart i felt courageous..

The waters were indeed dead, they weren't speaking to me i didn't feel in control at all..

My foot touched the heart of the waters and i looked around for the serpent, i felt anger deep within me. Anger aimed the serpent because of how much pain the waters were in..

I looked around and i saw him approaching, he was bigger than any snake that i have seen. Bigger than an anaconda.

Him: Theresa we meet again

He had red eyes and small horns on the head, he was a different kind of snake....

Me: The last time you had taken Calvin's likeness

Him: and that's why you found me attractive?

Me: hardly

Him: What makes you think that you can defeat me?

Me: I don't think i can defeat you, i know that i can defeat you!

He laughed, his laughter shook the waters..

Him: I am the one who tricked Eve

Me: But you still the same one who couldn't tempt Jesus

"Matthew 4 verse 1-11"

Him: Theresa we can be powerful think about it, i am the king of this world. I run this world

I chuckled..

Him: You are in my territory and i can kill you! The waters cannot protect you, they are dead!

Me: "Do not be afraid of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; rather be afraid of God, who can destroy both body and soul in hell" you have no power to destroy my soul, you can only torture my body!

Him: Theresa the God you talking about is the same God who subjected you here, he always wants but doesn't wanna give back. This is your destiny he wants you here, after "defeating me" you will stay here what about what you want? What about your happiness? You the only guardian of your siblings if God

was good why would he do this to you knowing that your siblings have no one? While you here what if your siblings get raised by an evil family? What if Zerra follows in your footsteps? What if she grows up to be exchanged to different men? Mother did it, you did it, why shouldn't she do it?

That hit home and made me a bit emotional..

Me: Stop!!! Just shut up!!

Him: If God was soo good why does he let the good suffer? Think of it Theresa he has favorites!

I put my hands on my ears..

Me: Stop!!!! Please stop!!

I was getting more and more emotional, his words felt right. All those who have served the Lord faithfully some of them are still unhappy, some of them still cry the same tears..

The more i thought of that the more i sank down...

Water was filling my lungs, i was drowning. I was defeated..

I sank down

Advertisement

my mortal body sank down on the heart of the ocean deep down. I have failed!! He has won..

I saw him floating around while i was laying there defeated, i was ready to die i was giving in to death..

I heard a voice inside of me:

"When all seems lost, the necklace shall show you the way"

I touched it and it glowed..

I heard a harmonious voice yet very powerful...

"I chose you before i gave you life, and before you were born i selected you"

I opened my eyes wider as the voice went on to speak..

"No one will be able to defeat you as long as you live, i will be with you as i was with Moses. I will always be with you; i will never abandon you"

I rose up as the voice went on to speak..

"Remember that i have commanded you to be determined and confident! Don't be afraid or discouraged, for, I, the Lord your God, am with you wherever you go"

I rose up higher and higher, i felt a courageous voice arising from deep within..

Me: God is not the enemy here but you are!

He made his way to me..

Me: God gives, God doesn't take. You the one who takes! You the one who rob people of what God has given them!

He got closer and closer..

Me: "Listen! I have been given authority, so that i can walk on snakes and scorpions and overcome all the power of the enemy, and nothing will hurt me"

He started wrapping himself around me..

Me: You talk about God taking and not giving but remember God loved me so much that he gave his only son so that if i believe in him i may not die but have eternal life! Unlike you God loved me soo much that he lost his only son to have me as a daughter! Unlike you the Lord has never subjected us into something that he has never done! He forgave human beings no matter how much they sinned, his love favours everyone it benefits everyone! God doesn't leave anyone, but it's people who leave him! You only seek hate, revenge, and sorrow

He tightened himself in hopes to break my bones.. He faced me head on..

Me: You trick people into believing that God is evil while you the evil one!!

I saw Nimueh's sword coming through down into the waters..

Me: Go to hell!!!

The sword went through him, i heard him scream. I heard him cry, he loosened himself around me and then he slowly disappeared..

Him: I will be back!!

As he disappeared and the sword stood still, the waters started being clear again. They restored their beautiful pureness. They were given life back, they went back into how they used to be.. I. Looked around, they were glowing more than they have glowed before..

Me: beautiful

I heard their sweet harmony again..

"you did it Urieh"

I couldn't believe it, i had defeated the serpent..

"You showed courage, you could've denied your calling and chose to be with your family but you chose to save us"

Me: It is my destiny

"because of how selfness you are, you will be rewarded"

Me: i don't understand

"You will go back to your loved ones, we wish you nothing but happiness and abundant love"

Me: i.. But.. Isn't this my destiny?

"God is the God of restoration, love conquers all. You saved us Urieh and we will forever be grateful"

Me: but my destiny?? What if he comes back?

"He will never come back until the next guardian, you have defeated him he will be scared to come back here. We will remain pure until our next guardian"

Me: thank you very much i..

"Remember you will be restored your human life you will leave as a human and no longer as an Angel. Never turn your back from the Lord, go to your loved ones. Go and be happy, the necklace you wear around your neck will always remind you of how much of a conquerer you are and that you were once a guardian of the waters"

I couldn't believe how selfless the waters can be, i cannot believe how selfless heaven can be..

I was lifted off to the surface of the waters...

"Urieh remember the code is 010101"

Me: Yes

I was lifted off from deep underneath the waters, when my head came out i looked up to the skies and i saw doves flying around. I got out of the waters to approach Faith, she was shocked...

Faith: incredible!!!!

I don't know what happened but all i know is that i was going back to my siblings and to the man that i love, i got my life back. I was going home...

45

THERESA

2 DAYS LATER

I still couldn't believe that the waters settled to losing me as a guardian i really thought that this was going to be it, i thought i was never going to come back. Sometimes a selfless act brings about fruitful results, and i am thankful that i was rewarded for my selfless act. I am meant to keep the chain around my neck which will always serve as a reminder that i defeated the devil, and it will always remind me of who i was once upon a time and also where i come from. I remembered the code and gave it to Faith who went on to give it to Prophet Badru, he prayed upon it to break the communication that once existed between Calvin and the serpent. Calvin was free from hearing the whispers of the devil, he was free to no longer serve him. Though he was free it doesn't mean that the devil will stop torturing him, only when he accepts Jesus and repent then he can be able to continue stamping on the devil that belongs under his feet. On my side i was happy that i was given my life back from hereon i was going to live like a normal human being, things of the supernatural i will no longer be able to see them with the naked eye i will walk by faith and not by sight..

I was back at home it's been a while since i was last here but the house is still welcoming and still feels like home. I was

waiting for Prophet Zaine who had one last surprise for me, i wondered what that could be.

I cleaned around a little, dusted the top parts and also put back things where they belonged just so the house can be neat..

Mpho wasn't around i don't know when he left and quite frankly I didn't care, I don't need him around anymore because i am no longer about that life.. I must admit that i am going to miss Faith and Nimueh, they played a tremendous role in my life and now i won't be able to see them again. I won't be able to see Nimueh again..

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: I am coming

I went to open and it was Prophet Zaine, he was with some gentleman and Carol. I was surprised to see Carol..

Me: Good afternoon

They greeted me back..

Me: please come in

They all came in...

Me: we can go to the living room..

We walked to the living room and i was a bit anxious, i mean everytime when Carol is in the picture things don't really end well..

Me: Can i get you anything to drink?

I was asking that question as if like i had something to offer

Advertisement

but i didn't. I only had water and now i am hoping they don't agree to me offering them something to drink..

Zaine: I would actually like a glass of water

I looked at the other two and they assured me that they are fine..

I got up from the couch and went to get Zaine a glass of water as requested, i then came back and gave it to him..

Zaine: thank you

He took a sip and then put it down..

Zaine: Sorry that we late i know that we were supposed to be here early in the morning but unfortunately i had a meeting

Me: It's fine i understand

Zaine: first of all its good to have you back

Me: It is good to be back

Zaine: we are very proud of you what you did was courageous

Me: Thank you very much

Zaine: not to waste anymore time we are here because we want to help you

Me: uhm i am not following...

Zaine: This is Mr Olifant, Zakes Olifant and then i am sure that you know Carol

Me: Yes i do

Zaine: Carol is a member of my church Purgatory

Me: Really? I didn't know that

Carol: I have been attending Purgatory for 6 months now and i also help in cases where a child is abused at home or if there's any child headed households

Zaine: She is doing a really good job helping others like you at the church

Me: Seems like that

Zaine: Carol came to me she needed advice on a case of two kids who almost skipped the country with their Guardian and when she mentioned your name and that they are your Siblings i had to intervene

Carol: Prophet Zaine asked if he could have the kids put away in a safe and a temporal foster home until you come back and able to look after them again

I didn't know how to respond to that..

Zaine: but unfortunately we still have to abide by what social services expect from you into making sure that the kids are living in a safe environment, and also if you are able to take care of them

Carol: Since you do not have a job i am not authorized to hand them back to you because financially you cannot take care of them

Zaine: That is where Mr Olifant comes in. He has his own construction company and his PA is on maternity leave so he needs a PA that's going to step in just until his PA comes back

Olifant: Prophet Zaine told me about you and i would really like it if you could be the one to releave my PA that's if you want the job

I was very speechless i didn't know what to say..

Carol: At least the kids will be in your custody then after a few months when his PA comes back you will look for another job

Zaine: And on my side i will help pay the kids school fees and their transportation so that you don't drown financially

Me: I... I am very speechless i don't know what to say, but thank you. Thank you to all of you. Thank you that God touched your hearts into helping me

Zaine: God will never leave you nor forsake you where there seems to be no way at all he creates one

Carol: That is true

Prophet Zaine took out an envelope..

Him: This should help you until you get paid

I accepted the envelope..

Zaine: It's R2000 you can buy groceries and use some of it for petrol to drive to work every morning

Me: I really don't know what to say

Mr Olifant gave me his business card..

Him: The address is there you can start on Monday and please bring along your CV

Me: thank you and i will do so

Carol: Tomorrow ill bring the kids

Me: i would truly appreciate it

They stood up..

Zaine: we wish you nothing but the best in your new life, may you continue to keep your faith in the Lord

Me: As always

Zaine: hoping to see you tonight we having a night prayer

I was caught up in between attending St Luther Ministries or Purgatory but my heart and my spirit felt comfortable with me attending Purgatory..

I walked them out to their cars..

Carol: Bye Theresa see you tonight at the whole night prayer if you coming

Me: i will come

Zaine: You have come very far Theresa embrace your new life and be proud of yourself

He put his hand on my shoulder...

Me: thank you Prophet

Zaine: May the good Lord continue to bless you exceedingly and abundantly, above what you could ever ask for

Me: Thank you very much

Zaine: See you later

Me: later

He walked up to his car while waving at me and his driver opened the door for him...

CALVIN

Prison was not my kind of place just to think i would be required to serve many years in this place that's isolated from society wasn't my cup of tea, i don't see myself being locked up in here for that long...

In the mist of thinking a lot yesterday i finally took Sway up on his offer just so that i can be out of here plus since Sterling told me that Theresa is back, i have no reason to be here anymore. I need to be out and get my life back in order, make wiser decisions that would be beneficial to me as an individual and also beneficial in my relationship with Theresa. I am taking a great risk, what if Theresa doesn't want anything to do with me anymore? But the kind of love that we had is not the kind that one just simply forgets and decides to move on with someone else...

I had requested for Sway to come and see me, he did show up.

Me: Hey

Him: i hope that you not going to waste my time

Me: not quite

Him: Then what do you want?

I looked around to make sure that the guards won't hear any word of what i was about to say

Me: I want in

Him: want in on what?

Me: The offer you made me i am in

Him: Why the sudden change of heart i thought you said you don't want anything to do with it?

Me: I thought about it and i really want in

Him: I hope you not pulling a stunt here

Me: Sway really?

He looked at me..

Him: Fine i will get you out

Me: When?

Him: I don't know maybe in two weeks time

Me: What?

Him: If you agreed that very same day when i proposed this to you, you would be out by now! So please this will take a bit of time just trust me

I leaned back..

Him: what's the rush? You not being abused here thanks to your money you bought yourself protection

Me: Just get it done

Him: I will

Me: and one more thing i need a cellphone

Him: for what?

Me: i just need a cellphone can you get me one?

Him: i will

Me: good

Him: anything else?

Me: that would be all

He stood up..

Him: I am glad that we will be doing business together

Me: Same here

I had no choice, it was either this or being locked up for a long time then have Theresa move on with someone else.

THERESA

The night prayer was very life changing, it was about letting go. Sometimes in life we hold on to things not realizing how much they hurt us, let go of what you don't understand and let God deal with it. There's things that we entwined with which makes it very hard to let them go even if they hurt us, we think holding on for longer would bring better results but instead it hurts us more and more. There's things that are not pleasant for the soul that we need to discard, there's things that we have no control over and we should learn to let them go.

I have been holding on to soo much pain especially the death of my mother but now after the night prayer i am ready to let go of that pain, because if i try to search for an answer as to why she died i will only be hurting myself more. It's best to just accept that she is gone and I need to move on with my life, i need to remember her by the special moments that we shared than always associate her death with painful tears....

That Saturday morning i was woken up by endless knocks at the door, if only the person knocking at the other end knew how sleepy i was they would give me peace. I got out of bed and put on my sleepers then headed to the door while yawning, i just need a couple more minutes to sleep i was very tired. I opened

the door and it was Carol, she was with CJ and Zerra. I couldn't believe my eyes i stood there frozen..

Carol: good morning

Me: morning

Carol: you knew that I was coming today

Me: Yes i just didn't think that..

Carol: well i had to bring them this early because i have a lot to do today

Me: It's okay and thank you very much Carol you don't know how much this means to me

Carol: I apologize for putting you through this ordeal of having them removed from you but i was mainly doing my job

Me: I totally understand and i am very grateful to know that there's people like you in the world who cares about the safety of children

Carol: well i will bring the forms for you sometime next week so that you can sign

Me: Thank you very much Carol

Carol: See you tomorrow at church

Me: Very well

She walked away while CJ and Zerra made their way in.. I closed the door.

Me: I am so happy to see you guys

It was a bit of an awkward situation, i haven't been there for them for a while so i cannot really pick up with them were we had left off..

Me: Wow Zerra you are wearing a pretty dress who got it for you?

Zerra: Uncle Calvin

Me: It's pretty

She held on to CJ's arm....

Me: do you guys wanna go out perhaps may..

CJ: can you take us to prison so we can see Calvin?

Me: I..

CJ: It's wrong that they locked him up he was just trying to help

Me: I am sure he was but still he broke the law

CJ: You wouldn't understand Theresa you were not there for us this past couple of weeks

Me: and i apologize CJ

CJ: When are you leaving again?

Me: what?

CJ: It's always like that with you when are you leaving again?

Me: I am not going anywhere

Zerra: I wanna go to Claire's house

Me: Claire?

CJ: Claire is Calvin's daughter her and Zerra they have formed a tight sisterly bond

CJ looked around..

CJ: I totally understand Zerra i also wanna go to Calvin's place

Me: That's not fair

CJ: It's not fair to you too, it's not fair that we are a burden to you

Me: a burden? I have taken care of you all these years since Mom passed on without complaining why would you be a burden to me now? CJ: because you never there!!!

Me: I had things to take care off!!

CJ: Just get us to Calvin please that's all we asking for

He walked to his bedroom..

Me: He is in jail!!

I cannot believe CJ is acting this cold towards me...

.

.

CALVIN

I thought Sway said my release was going to take a while but he surprised me this Morning

Advertisement

i was released. I don't know how he pulled that off and i don't care, but what i care about is that I am a free man...

I walked up to him he was waiting for me outside..

Him: you a lucky bastard do you know that?

Me: How did you pull that off?

Him: You have your secrets i have mine too

I went and got inside the car...

Me: I wonder what the papers are going to say about me

Him: It will blow over

Me: they have ruined my reputation enough!

I haven't heard the devil whispering to me lately, i haven't felt his presence at all. That could mean thing, that Theresa has indeed defeated him..

Him: so obviously i didn't do this for free

Me: i have already agreed to working with you

Him: working for me

Me: working with you, i am Calvin Barca i work for no one!

He chuckled..

Him: Whatever boasts your ego

Me: What else do you want?

Him: 50% shares in the company

Me: whatever it is that you smoking must be strong

Him: It wasn't easy getting you out i almost lost my job

Me: 50% is a no

Him: 40%

Me: 20%

Him: That's ridiculous

Me: I am still going to run your drug operation it's my ass on the line

Him: we will settle with 20% for now

He continued driving..

Him: any plans on how you going to revive your company?

Me: I will see

Him: am i dropping you at home?

Me: Yeah wanna shower then go and see someone

Him: then we will talk on Monday

Me: Yes come down at the office

.

.

THERESA

CJ was making things very difficult for me and that influenced Zerra to give me an attitude too.. I tried sleeping but i couldn't fall asleep just thinking about how distant me and the kids are, it's not good at all.

I walked up to the lounge they were watching tv, i had the laundry basket with me..

Me: I am going to do laundry outside incase you guys want anything

No one cared to say anything..

Me: You know CJ i didn't leave on purpose, i had other things to take care off

He ignored me..

Me: i wish i can explain to you but you wouldn't understand

CJ: trust me i understand perfectly fine

Me: what matters now is that we are together and nothing can keep us apart anymore

CJ: Yeah but for how long?

Me: I am really trying here

My phone rang on the small table, i put the basket down and went to get it.. Strangely it was a call from Calvin..

Me: Calvin??

That was strange..

CJ looked at me.. I looked at the phone for a while and didn't answer, i put it down on the table and let it rang... He is supposed to be in jail, how is he calling me??

CJ picked up the phone and answered the call he put him on loud speaker..

CJ: Hey Calvin

Cal: CJ??

CJ: where are you?

Cal: i should be asking you that same question

CJ: I am at home

Cal: Really?

Zerra: Can you come and pick us up?

Cal: Where is Theresa?

CJ: she is here

Cal: why isn't she the one picking up her phone?

CJ: i have no idea where are you?

Cal: I just got home

CJ: can you pick us up?

Cal: Uhm.. Yeah sure

CJ: cool we will be waiting

He hung up, Zerra jumped all excited..

Zerra: We going home!!

That really hurt me deeply, Calvin didn't even care to ask me if it's okay he just said he will pick them up that was an arrow shot straight into my heart..

47

THERESA

Something about Calvin wasn't sitting very well with me, deep down i felt that something is wrong. Communication between him and the devil have been broken but i don't think he has changed, i could feel it that he was still caught up in his ways.

I was hanging the laundry on the washing line when he made his way to me still looking handsome as ever..

Him: Hey

Me: Hey, I stopped what I was doing.

Him: you look good

Me: and you still look handsome

Him: I try

Me: I see, Things were very awkward between us..

Him: I trust everything went well?

Me: Yes everything went well i am a born again Christian

Him: Wow that's... I am happy for you

Me: thank you

Him: so you will be attending church and everything?

Me: i have already started i go to Prophet Zaine's church

Him: I heard he is very powerful

Me: He is

Him: I like your necklace

I held the pendant..

Me: It tells a story

He nodded...

I continued hanging the clothes..

Him: did they influence you against me?

Me: Why?

Him: You acting very cold towards me i thought that you would be happy to see me

Me: They didn't influence me against you

Him: Then what is it?

Me: It's nothing

Him: what it is Theresa? I can see that something is bothering you

I exhaled and tried my hands..

Me: I read the papers and what they said about you when i was at St Luther Ministries

Him: I know what they wrote about me but trust me i had no choice i did what i thought was right

Me: I understand that but.. Calvin you were in prison facing a serious crime but now you here standing in front of me what's going on?

Him: lack of evidence

Me: lack of.. you turned yourself in that means you guilty!

Him: Theresa if i needed to be told about my sins i would go to church! I don't need a Pastor right now i need my girlfriend

I went back to the laundry again..

Him: All that i did, i did because i didn't want you to lose your Siblings and now i am the bad guy?

Me: All that i am asking is for you to be honest with me that's all

Him: Theresa this is my life! This has always been my life it's who i am! I grew up this way

I looked at him..

Me: You will never change will you?

Him: Where are the kids?

Me: I just need you to talk to CJ for me seeing that you the only person right now who can get through him

Him: I am not talking to CJ about anything

Me: Why you being like this?

Him: No why are you being like this Toots? Before you went to that mission you were madly in love with me! what happened to that?

Me: I am still madly in love with you i just want you to stop with this things that you doing! The life you living is very dangerous remember how i got hurt from it? CJ ended up in Hospital? You never learned anything from that?

Him: This time around it's different

Me: It's not different!

Him: I will never hurt you Theresa ever again

Me: You already hurting me in a different way!

Him: would you have rather had me locked up for a long time?

Me: Something would've came up all you had to do was to just believe!

Him: Sweetheart please! This is reality don't you think some of those prisoners believe? Some of them attend church inside the prison but nothing changes they still serving time!

Me: Maybe the devil didn't make you this way, you were forever this way you were forever damaged! He is gone but you still the same old devil!

Him: You take back!

Me: Or what? You going to beat me up to a pulp again?

Him: Where are the kids?

Me: They not going anywhere with you they under my care

Him: CJ doesn't feel that way

Me: He is just angry he is going to be fine

Him: Let's go and ask him

He walked to the kitchen door...

Me: Calvin wait!

He stopped..

Me: what are we doing?

He turned and looked at me...

Me: This is not what I wanted to come back too

Him: I am not the best human being right now but i love you and i wanna be with you, it's really all up to you

He left me there and went inside..

All that i fought for, for him to be free today and still he doesn't wanna change he is not being fair to me at all...

I am really in a crossfire i need to pray about Yes i love him but his devilish ways still worry me..

He came out with the kids

Advertisement

CJ looked a bit relieved that he was going to be away from me..

Cal: aren't you guys going to say goodbye to Theresa?

CJ: Nah im cool, ill be in the car

He walked away with Zerra following him, my heart bled a little that i couldn't even stop the tears from falling..

Cal: You can just move back into the house with us

Me: I am not moving in plus i got a job that i have to be serious about

Cal: Bangladesh Hotel?

Me: No i am going to be Mr Olifant's PA i am starting on Monday

Cal: Who the hell is Olifant?

Me: My new boss

Cal: If you wanted a job you could've just said so, i would've created a position for you in my company

Me: I am fine Calvin

Cal: Toots look..

He came to me..

Cal: look at me

I looked at him and he held my hands...

Cal: I am sorry that you don't support my lifestyle but it shouldn't prevent us from being together, we have come a long way to just give up on our love

Me: I just have this very bad feeling about you

Cal: I am fine and everything is fine

He put his hand on my cheek..

Cal: I don't wanna lose you please i lost you once and i don't wanna lose you again

He literally knelt down while still holding my hands, he looked at me with pleading eyes..

Him: one last chance if i mess up then you can leave me for good and i won't even try to stop you

I looked at him and how tortured he was not knowing what my answer is going to be, i could've sworn that his heart was about to beat out of his chest..

Me: One last chance

He smiled and got up..

Him: one last chance

He arched my back and kissed me..

Me: Stop you going to make me fall (laughing)

Him: don't worry I got you, He allowed me to stand up straight...

Him: One last thing

Me: what is that?

Him: Move in with me

Me: Cal.

Him: Okay you a Christian now i understand how it works and i respect your religious views so let's get married first then you move in

Me: get what?

Him: why shouldn't we? I love you and you love me.. Let's get married, Marriage? That's a huge step

THERESA

Calvin was furious that i didn't say yes to his marriage proposal, he just got up and left. In his own messed up brain he didn't understand why I said "No" even though I tried to explain but he just up and left. He believed that the reason why I said No was because i have found a new guy, that the church forced me to settle with a guy that is like me. A guy that is a Christian and knows more about God. I don't understand where this attitude and behaviour comes from, but all i know is that i don't like it. I don't like it one bit.....

The following day i woke up and prepared for church i wanted to be there earlier so that i can talk to Prophet Zaine about this before the service starts, i had prayed about it and now it's time i consult with someone who is more spiritually mature than me who can give me better advice and insight. I called Calvin before leaving home but he didn't take my call, the only reply i got from him was a text that said "go be with your new man since obviously i am no longer good enough for you anymore", that hurt because i am not cheating on him there's no other man! He is the only man...

Was the devil really gone from Calvin? Did we really free him from the devil? Those were the questions that circulated my mind as i drove to Purgatory, i was also playing gospel music

trying to ease my broken heart and troubled soul. I am at the verge of letting my relationship go because really i don't know what to do anymore, Calvin will never change i cannot keep on allowing him to busy hurt me like this.....

I arrived at church and cars were driving in, the service only starts in an hour but already it was getting full. That's how powerful Zaine is. I thought of going to the auditorium and securing myself a seat, but talking to Zaine was more important right now so i made my way straight to his office...

I knocked twice at the door, i heard a female voice speaking..

Voice: Come in

I opened the door and made my way in, he was with a very beautiful woman.

Me: Good morning

They greeted me back..

Woman: I'll go and check on the kids

She kissed him on his cheek and that confirmed to me that it was his wife, don't judge me i don't know his wife.. She smiled at me as she walked out..

Me: Your wife is beautiful

Him: she is, i am very blessed to have her

Me: It is a blessing you guys look good together

Him: thank you

I stood there..

Him: something troubling you?

Me: you can say that

Him: what it is?

He pointed at the chair and i went to sit down..

He passed me the box of tissues as tears threatened to escape my eyes...

Zaine: what is wrong Urieh?

Me: Funny how you call me that but i am no longer an Angel

Zaine: You will always be Urieh

I took a tissue..

Zaine: What's troubling you on such a beautiful peaceful day when you supposed to be praising the Lord

Me: It's Calvin

Zaine: What about Calvin?

Me: Yesterday he asked me to marry him and i said no

Zaine: Why?

Me: It's sudden, i think we need time to mend our broken relationship first before jumping into marriage

Zaine: I understand

Me: but unfortunately he doesn't see it that way he is soo sure that now since i am a Christian the church has influenced me to leave him and marry a man who shares the same religious views as me

Zaine: There's women who are married to men who are not Christians

Advertisement

sometimes it brings a lot of tension in the marriage because you become limited to serving the Lord. Night prayers to your spouse will be an accusation of you cheating, it's never easy being with someone who doesn't understand the path you have chosen. Some other spouses are very understanding but some are not, all we can do is to pray for them and show them that Religion is not soo evil. They must see God in us so that our actions can one day draw them closer into being born again

Me: Calvin is not like that he is very stubborn im even wondering if the devil has left him for real

Zaine: You can drive the devil or demons away from a person but that won't make them an Angel, Calvin is still vulnerable to be controlled by the devil

Me: I just don't know what to do

Zaine: you have done all you can now it's up to him, he has to repent, he has to leave his old life and unfortunately that you cannot force him to do. It has to be up to him

Me: I love him so much but something about him doesn't really sit well with me

Zaine: something like what?

Me: I don't know but I feel like he might drive me to the nearest hell

Zaine: No matter how evil he might seem but there's still good in him, and the good in him is the love that he has for you. May the love that he has for you be the one to change him, make him confess his sins and then repent

Me: I am not going to give up on him

Zaine: Just remember one thing though

Me: Yes?

Zaine: Some other people just cannot be saved no matter how much we can try to make them change

Me: but that doesn't mean we should give up on them right?

Zaine: No, giving up is not a language we communicate

Me: thank you, thank you for this talk

Zaine: It's my pleasure

I stood up..

Me: I will see you at church

Zaine: Very well

I walked to the door..

Zaine: One more thing Theresa

Me: what is it?

Zaine: Never force Calvin to come to church it's supposed to be out of his own will, forcing him you will make him hate God and the church

Me: I understand

Zaine: You can go and take your place at the auditorium

Me: again thank you

Zaine: you welcome

.

.

CALVIN

It was a beautiful sunny day, I have already planned how we going to spend this day. I thought about having a mini braai and

let the kids swim since it's hot while i braai the meat. I have already called Sway to come and he was going to come with his girlfriend, i also called Wendy to come with Claire since Zerra was nagging me that she wants to see her..

I made my way to the door when i heard the door bell ring..

I opened and it was Sterling..

Me: It's about time

He walked in and closed the door..

Me: and?

Him: Nothing

Me: what do you mean nothing?

I made my way to the Lounge to pour myself a glass of whiskey..

Him: There's nothing suspicious

Me: Sterling there has to be someone her attitude towards me has changed

Him: There's no one yesterday she was indoors and today she went to church

Me: No one was seeing going into her place? Not even that little boy Mpho?

Him: No the only people that went to her place was Prophet Zaine, Carol, and some other gentleman

Me: Zaine..

Him: Yes

Me: His name shows up a lot in everything that involves Toots

Him: You think Zaine is having an affair with Theresa? That's Ludacris

Me: I don't pay you for your opinion or what you think

I made my way to the stairs..

Me: I don't like this Zaine of a person pop a cap on him

Him: You want me to kill a Prophet?

Me: i am not asking you i am telling you

Him: Barca don't you think you going too far now?

Me: Again i am not paying you to tell me what you think i pay you to follow orders! Kill every man that comes close to her, Start with Zaine are we clear?

Him: Crystal

Me: Good!

THERESA

We had a beautiful service at church Prophet Zaine was preaching about the power of prayer, he reminded us how important it is to communicate with heaven at all times. He also went on to show us the importance of Praying being one of the important tools that a child of God uses against the devil. Prayer should never be taken for granted, words hold a powerful significance to one's life. Pray even when you too broken and words fail you, Pray even when you don't see the reason to pray anymore. Sometimes we are faced with so much difficulties and struggles that we don't see the reason to pray anymore, but in that mist of confusion call upon the Lord and make the devil question himself as to why you still praying while things are not working out for you. Never stop praying until something happens..

I wish that i was introduced to salvation long time ago, the time when i was still consumed by Anger and Pain i had no doubt that my life would've been different. I wouldn't have used my body for sexual immorality, by then i would've exercised my faith. Have that kind of faith that can move a mountain, have faith even when the world says "It's impossible" after all why listen to the world than God who created it? Change your mindset, start listening to the creator than what was created...

After the service i decided to drive to Calvin's place so i could see the kids, maybe i can talk to CJ and try to fix our relationship. He might be acting like a spoiled brat but i don't blame him, lately i haven't given them stability. The trust that he once had for me has been broken by my failing to communicate with him, by my failing to be there for him. Deep down he is a scared little boy, he is scared that i might up and leave again and i don't blame him....

The door was opened for me by this pretty woman who looked a bit like Mrs Bhengu (Nimueh)..

Her: Hi

Me: Good afternoon

Her: Please come in

I made my way in..

She closed the door..

Me: uhmm i am here to see my Brother CJ and my little sister Zerra

Her: You must be Theresa

Me: Yes i am

Her: I am Wendy, Calvin's baby mama

She came and gave me a handshake...

Me: nice to meet you

Her: Same here

Me: are they around?

Her: Zerra is bathing and CJ went out with Barca

She had an apron around her waist..

Her: Would you like something to drink?

Me: I wasn't planning on staying that long

Her: Come on we having a braai you should stay

Me: I don't know i really don't wanna intrude

Her: Nonsense! You are Barca's woman technically i am supposed to be welcomed here by you

She went back to doing her salads...

Me: Can i ask you something?

Her: Yeah sure

Me: Are you.. Are you Nimu.. I mean are you Mrs Bhengu's daughter?

She stopped what she was doing and looked at me..

Her: do you know my Mother?

Me: Yes i knew her she was my neighbour

Her: That's.. I didn't know

Me: How is she?

Her: She is at my house ontop of a small table in the corner..
She is in an urn

Me: I am sorry what happened?

Her: No one knows i just went to visit her this other time and
she was on the floor dead

Me: I am truly sorry

Her: I didn't wanna bury her because i wanted to keep her
forever instead i had her cremated

Nimueh had been restored to being a warrior Angel her body
had to remain behind as she took on her spiritual form

Advertisement

because what is off flesh cannot enter heaven...

Me: You have a good heart just like her

Her: Thank you

The door opened, CJ and Cal walked in..

Wendy: and what do you know they are back

She looked at CJ....

Wendy: You have a visitor

CJ looked at me....

CJ: I'll be in my room

He walked away..

Wendy: Uhm that was awkward

Cal: Wendy can you please give us some few minutes?

Wendy: I will go and check if the girls are done

She gave us privacy....

Cal: what are you doing here?

Me: I am here to see my Siblings

Cal: Well they don't wanna see you

Me: i can see that

Cal: you can leave before you upset them more

Me: They are my Siblings!

Cal: Siblings who clearly don't wanna see you!

I knew what this was about, he was still mad about the proposal..

Me: Calvin i didn't say yes to your proposal because i think we not ready for marriage

Cal: you said no because you have your eyes on someone else

Me: what?

Cal: Prophet Zaine acting all holy like he is doing good by you but in actual fact we know what he is really about!

Me: Zaine is happily married!... Gosh Cal are you hearing yourself?

Cal: You have changed! Ever since you came back you not the same old Toots!

Me: You know what Calvin seriously i cannot do this with you anymore it's emotionally draining and physically tiring

Him: what are you saying?

Me: Maybe we should just.. Maybe we should just break up

Him: break up?

Me: Yes clearly this is not working

Him: be specific you are not working!

Me: I probably should go

I headed to the door..

Him: You are going to regret those words pretty soon

Me: Are you threatening me?

Him: If i was threatening you, you would know!

I opened the door and walked out..

I regret the day i ever fell in love with this devil!

.

.

ZAINE

I was in my office talking to Prophet Badru about Bonolo wanting to write a book based on how her step father used to sexually abuse her and how that experience affected her..

Badru: She did come to my house Yesterday to talk to Mercy about publishing the book, she was asking Mercy to get her a publisher

I kept quiet...

Badru: Let me guess you don't support her?

Me: No i don't and you shouldn't either

Badru: Prophet..

Me: I am not talking as Prophet Zaine right now but i am talking as her Husband

Badru: I personally think that the book can help a lot of people

Me: It might help a lot of people but it will break her, she hasn't gotten over what happened. There are times when she wakes up at night and cry, there are times when she dates back to what happened and it breaks her. She hasn't totally healed from what happened

Badru: Have you ever thought that as much as this book might change a lot of lives but it can heal her too, sometimes telling your pain can heal you too

Me: Yeah i don't know about that

Badru: What's the title?

Me: Purgatory

Badru: That's a fitting title

The door flung open... Some gentleman walked in..

Security: Sorry Prophet Radebe we tried stopping him but he says that he has an important message for you, He came closer..

Him: Sorry Prophet to just come in like this but.. My name is Sterling and i work for Calvin Barca, i do all the dirty deeds for him

I looked at the security guard and nodded that he can leave..

Sterling: I was sent here to kill you

Badru stood up..

Sterling: But i am not going too, Prophet i am not a religious person. I don't have a conscience, i kill without thinking and i don't regret it!

Badru: Who sent you?

Sterling: Barca because he believes that Theresa is having an affair with you, Me: What??

Badru: The code was burnt, communication was broken but the devil never left him

Sterling: I don't feel right with this, deep down i feel like i will never have inner peace if i kill you. I feel like i will literally lose my sanity and wonder around in the cemetery like a mad man should i kill you

Me: Calm down Son

Him: Prophet you don't understand.

If i don't i am afraid that he will kill you, both you and Theresa!

Badru: The Devil is seeking revenge that Theresa defeated him in the blessed waters

Badru and i looked at each other..

Both of us: Theresa!!!

I took my car keys and we headed to the door.

50

THERESA

I was surprised to see Prophet Badru, Prophet Zaine, and some guy who introduced himself as Sterling walking into my house at this time. Something bad is about to happen for them to be here, i mean both of them..

Me: What is going on?

Zaine: Please take a sit

Me: I don't think i want to take a seat

Badru: Please Urieh

I sat down..

Me: what's going on?

Zaine looked at Sterling..

Sterling: Theresa i fear that your life might be in danger

Me: Why?

Sterling: I am Barca's right hand man and he is very adamant that you and Prophet Zaine are having an affair

Me: not this again

Sterling: He assigned me to kill Prophet Zaine

Me: what?

Sterling: But i am not going too

Me: Why is Calvin doing this?

Badru: I believe that he is still being influenced by the devil

Me: but the code was burnt wasn't it?

Badru: Yes but that don't mean the devil has let go of him

Zaine: Theresa Calvin is dangerous if Sterling doesn't carry out this task i am afraid Calvin might do it himself

I stood up and went to stand by the window..

Me: I don't understand why Calvin would do this

Zaine: We can drive out the devil all we want, but Calvin won't change

Badru: He is very much consumed by this life so the only thing that's important right now is to keep you safe

Me: All i wanted was a normal loving relationship, i Love him i don't know what i am supposed to do to keep our relationship

Badru: You did all you could Theresa one thing you cannot do is force him to change

Sterling: Money and power has always meant everything to Calvin

Me: My Siblings are with him

Zaine: We will try our best to have them returned to you safe and sound

Badru: Right now i think it's safe that you move in with me and my wife

Zaine: I think she would be more safer at my house

Badru: Calvin is out to get you don't you think your house will be the first place for him to look?

Zaine: What if he comes to your house?

Badru: How would he know?

Zaine: He is Calvin Barca who is very much influenced by the devil

Badru: I still say she is safer with me

They went on and on arguing about who i should move in with that they were giving me a headache..

Me: How about i go back to St Luther Ministries?

They both looked at me..

Me: I don't feel safe moving in with either of you, i cannot put you and your families in danger like that. St Luther Ministries is the last place he would go and look

Zaine: she has a point

Badru: You should start packing then so we can move

I left them and went to my bedroom to start packing my clothes. It still wasn't clicking to me that Calvin wanted me dead, it doesn't make sense. What is going on? Why is he acting like this? My mission was supposed to bring us closer but it drifted us apart. I guess some other people are just not meant to be saved...

After packing i went back to the living room..

Me: I am ready

Badru: Then we should go

Me: one last request

Zaine: what is it?

Me: I want my Siblings returned to me

Badru: We will work on that

Zaine: I will talk to Carol

Me: Thank you

Sterling took my bag as we made our way out of the house, how did it come to this? Why am i now running away from a man that i was supposed to be safe with? A man who was supposed to love me???

Zaine: I will drive with Theresa, Badru and Sterling you can drive together

Badru: we will follow you

As i got in Zaine's car i noticed a strange car parked just 4 houses away from mine

Advertisement

i didn't know the car or who it belonged too but there was just something strange about it.

Zaine: are you alright?

I nodded..

Me: Yes i am alright

Zaine: go on now we have to keep moving

I took one last look at the car and something about it didn't sit very well with me..

.

.

CALVIN

Monday morning i was back at the office, i needed to revive my company and i am going to do it. I am going to make sure it amounts to the same level as how it was before..

My assistant walked in...

Her: Coffee?

She raised the mug at me..

Me: thank you

She came and put it down on my table..

Her: I am glad we are back, i know it won't take one day to get this company running but we are going to do it

Me: That's the spirit

We heard a knock at the door, Sterling came in..

Sterling: Good morning

I looked at my assistant..

Her: I will be at my desk if you need me

Me: thank you

She walked out..

Sterling: Must be an important task that you called me here so early in the morning

He took a seat..

I would pop a cap on him right now! Sterling has betrayed me, Yesterday i was surveilling Theresa's house and i saw him

together with Zaine, Theresa, and Badru. I saw them coming out of the yard and making their way into the cars, Sterling has betrayed me!

Me: Is Zaine taken care off?

Him: still working on that

Me: Why is it taking long?

Him: Zaine is a Prophet, a very known powerful Prophet you cannot just walk up to him and shoot him. He has protection

Me: didn't know you were this religious

I sat down on my chair..

Me: and Theresa?

Him: she hasn't done anything suspicious i haven't seen anyone walking to her house

I looked at him, he was lying to me!

Me: Thank you Sterling you have always been loyal

He stood up..

Sterling: glad i could help

Me: I will call you when i need you

Him: Bye

Me: Bye

He made his way out while Sway made his way in..

Sway: Morning

Me: Morning

Sway: How does it feel to be back here?

Me: Still feels the same

He sat down...

Him: I have something important to discuss with you

Me: I am listening

Sway: a client of mine back in Mexico is interested in your
tempered with cocaine opioid

Me: Really?

Sway: Yes he is willing to pay a lot

Me: That's good

Sway: It is but how are we going to get the merchandise there?

Me: Obviously we going to need a mule

Him: I don't see any girl willing to do that, they well informed
now about trafficking drugs

Me: Leave that to me i know just the girl

Sway: You work on that in two days time she must be on the plane

Me: I will see to it

Sway: You know i didn't trust you at first but now i do

Me: This is my life

Him: Call me then

Me: One more thing

Him: Yes?

Me: i need someone to be taken care off

Him: You work for me i don't have to be doing your dirty deeds

Me: We working together plus i am going all out to get you a mule you know how difficult that is?

He sighed..

Him: who is it?

Me: My right hand man Sterling

Sway: I will see what i can do

Me: good having you as a business partner

Him: Yeah whatever just get that mule ready

Me: i will.. You can count on me

51

THERESA

Today it was my first day at work, i was very excited. I can now make reasonable money to get through and provide for my Siblings, i know that it's just a temporary job but it's better than nothing. It's gonna give me a better head start in life..

Mr Olifant walked in and i stood up.

Him: Morning

Me: Morning Sir

Him: Pen and Pad then follow me to my office

Me: Okay

I took a pen and a pad then followed him to his office.

Him: You look good i am very much impressed by your outfit

Me: Thank you

Him: First thing's first coffee, i drink coffee every morning exactly at 08:00am strong black coffee with 4 spoons of sugar

I wrote that down..

Him: If i am not mistaken i have an early meeting today prepare the boardroom put brouchers and water

Me: I will do that

Him: One last thing, don't look so uptight relax this job is supposed to be fun i am not a monster

Me: Sorry i am a bit nervous

Him: understandable

Me: But i won't disappoint you

Him: I sure hope not

Me: I will prepare the boardroom

I walked to the door to exit..

Him: my coffee first

Me: Ohw yes i am sorry ill get it

Him: Where are you getting it?

Me: Uhm

Him: if you not sure about something ask

Me: Okay

Him: There's a coffee cafe just around the corner you can get it there

He took out a R50 note and gave it to me..

Me: I'll get it

Him: Hurry

Me: Yes Sir

I walked out of there and hurried next door to get him coffee..

.

.

CALVIN

Me: And?

Beverly: Good presentation

Me: I pride myself in my drug it helps a lot of people, especially cancer patients, patients who have heard surgery

Advertisement

and women who have

Dysmenorrhea.

She browsed through the broucher and then put it down.

Her: Not forgetting that it has killed a lot of people too

Me: That is not true, deaths are caused by negligence when it comes to Doctors prescribing the correct dosage. Also it depends on the patient, some patients tend to be addicted

Her: It has a high potential dependence doesn't it?

Me: don't all drugs do?

Her: Mr Barca i am very impressed by your presentation and your drug

Me: Then why aren't we signing the contract?

Her: We cannot ignore the fact that you have been accused of serious crimes lately

Me: Those were allegations if i was guilty i wouldn't be here

Her: Let me think about this

Me: take all the time you need

Her: very well

She stood up and left, i sat down and exhaled..

My assistant came in..

Her: and?

Me: she said she will think about it

Her: That's the second one to say that today

Me: how many clients do we have now to pitch too?

Her: Not much trust me only two left

Me: I hope that they can give us a positive feedback

Her: me too

I looked at her from head to toe..

Me: You look sexy today

She blushed..

Her: Ohw thank you

Me: i think short skirts suit you.. You have beautiful thick thighs

Her: I don't think that's appropriate to say

Me: my bad then

Her: i will send in the next client when they arrive

Me: And i will be waiting

She walked out as fast as she could.

I took my phone and called Sway.

Sway: Barca

Me: and?

Him: i have found someone who is willing to do it

Me: good that's very good i will meet you at the warehouse
then when i had fetched her from school

Sway: are you sure that this is going to convince her Sister to
traffick drugs?

Me: If you saw a video of your sister strapped with a bomb
wouldn't you freak out?

Sway: You have a point

Me: and Sterling?

Sway: He is going to be taken care of tonight

Me: that's good

Sway: I am at work call you later

Me: i will wait for your call

Since Theresa is not going to traffick drugs willingly, i will force her to do it. Sway has organized one of his guys to strap a bomb on Zerra then take a video and send it to Theresa by then she won't have a choice. As soon as she arrives in Mexico, i will call and tip them off at the Airport that a South African girl might be carrying drugs and i hope she's going to get a life sentence for this or maybe a death sentence.

THERESA

I was sitting in at the meeting taking notes but i couldn't focus on what was being said, i had this bad feeling. I had this feeling that something bad was about to happen and i won't be able to stop it. I touched my necklace, the pendant didn't glow indeed i was no longer the Goddess of the waters from hereon i will have to figure out everything on my own.

52

CALVIN

At 13:00 i went to fetch Zerra from school and we drove up to the warehouse. I had brought for her, her favorite teddy bear to make the whole scenario less frightening for her. While driving to the warehouse i would adjust the rear view mirror and look at her sitting in the back seat talking to her teddy bear, she would smile as my eyes landed on her. I maybe be heartless, i am heartless yes but i would never put her life in danger. Zerra and CJ mean a lot to me, i have grown to love them as my own.. With the bomb situation, obviously a real bomb is not going to be attached to her the whole thing is going to be staged and made to seem real so that Theresa can fall for it. After sending that video Zerra is going to move in with Sway and his family for a couple of days, she's going to stay with them until Theresa boards that plane. Zerra will be perfectly safe but to Theresa she will seem to be in danger because of the video..

When we arrived at the warehouse, the lieutenant assigned to the case by Sway was already strapping in Zerra who seemed a bit scared..

I went and knelt next to her while holding her hand..

Me: Are you okay sweetheart?

Zerra: I am scared

I gave her the teddy bear..

Me: They will be done very soon okay? Look Mr Bear is also here

She took the teddy bear and held it close to her while i looked at the lieutenant

lieutenant: We are almost done

Me: You better make sure that she doesn't feel pain from any of this

lieutenant: It's a painless procedure the timer is even fake

Me: good

I got up..

Sway: Let's record the video

I stepped away from her which made her more nervous, she had a frown on her face which was good. She will look very scared and terrified in the video..

I tried keeping her calm on the other side as everything took place and they took the video..

When we were done the lieutenant signaled and i went to get everything off her..

Sway: Come and look at the video

I went and looked at the video, and i won't lie it looked very convincing. She seemed scared and the fake bomb seemed so real..

Me: Send it to her

I gave them Theresa's phone number..

I then went to Zerra..

Me: Hey how are you feeling?

Her: Good

Me: and you did very good

She concentrated on her teddy bear..

Me: Look you are going to go with that man okay?

Zerra: Why?

Me: Because Calvin is going away for a while.. Claire will be there

She lightened up..

I went to Sway..

Me: Better make sure you take better care of both my girls

Sway: What do you take me for? I would never hurt kids

Me: then that's good

I went back to Zerra..

Me: Be good for Calvin okay?

Her: Okay

I hugged her and kissed her on the cheek..

Me: I love you

Zerra: I love you

.

.

THERESA

I thought this day was never going to end, i started off pretty nervously and ended up pretty nervously. Mr Olifant kept on telling me that i did good but, his good was not good enough for me. I could've done better.

Olifant: You did good today Ms Mendoza

Me: Thank you sir but I feel like i could've done more

Olifant: It was your first day, don't beat yourself too much about it

Me: thank you

Olifant: See you tomorrow

Me: see you tomorrow

I walked away to my car. I really need this job and i cannot beat myself up thinking that i didn't give it my all today, but Mr Olifant said i gave it my all so i probably did..

I got inside my car and my phone beeped, i checked it and i had received a video on whatsApp..

I thought it was one of those spam videos but something deep inside of me forced me to open the video

Advertisement

i opened it and i got the biggest shock of my life..

At the end of the video Calvin's contacts came through, i was in awe. I couldn't believe that Calvin would do this, why though? Why would he put my little sister's life in danger like that? Doesn't make any sense! I took my phone and called him..

Him: Toots

Me: don't you dare call me that!

Cal: hit a nerve?

Me: Hit a nerve? Hit a nerve Calvin? No! this time around you went way too far!

Him: I was hoping for that

Me: You are sick!!! I am calling the cops

Cal: Let's not be stupid! If you call the cops she's going to die and i am not tripping

Me: What do you want?

Him: Come at my house and we will talk.. Remember if you come with cops i am the only one who knows where she is and i will never give out the secret location

Me: I will come alone

Cal: You do that i will be waiting!

I threw my phone on the passenger's seat and drove up to his place all in all driving with a lot of thoughts circulating In my mind..

THERESA

I arrived at his place and I made my way in, i was beyond the word "mad"

Me: Calvin!!!.. Calvin!!! (screaming)

He made his way down the stairs..

Him: that was quick

He said that while looking at his wrist watch

I looked at him as he made his way to me, initially I had a mouthful to say to him but now words failed me.

Cal: Are you going to say something?

Me: I thought you loved me

Cal: I did and I still do

Me: This is what you call "Love"

Cal: You went Theresa and I waited for you, you came back a completely different person. The way you looked at me wasn't the same anymore

He put his hand on my cheek, wiping my tears..

Cal: I wanted to change, I was ready to change for you but unfortunately I lost you

Me: I loved you.. I..

Cal: That's the problem "you loved me" and you don't anymore

He retracted his hand back..

Me: If you wanna hurt me it's fine but don't do it with the kids, they are innocent

Cal: I didn't wanna do it Theresa but you pushed me too

Me: obviously you're doing this because you want something, what is it?

Cal: Just something very simple

I looked at him..

Cal: Traffic drugs

I laughed..

Me: You are very insane! More insane than i thought! You want me to be banged up abroad?

Cal: Actually you won't be if you don't get caught

Me: Forget it!

Cal: Time is running out for Zerra

Me: Is this what i get for loving you?

Cal: You forgot one thing.. You can never love the devil

Me: i should've known

Cal: It's very easy Theresa you traffic these drugs and then i let you go, i will even convince the kids to move back in with you

I closed my eyes..

Me: When am i doing it?

Cal: Tomorrow.. You will go to London and then get a connecting flight there straight to Mexico, from London to Mexico is about 10 hours 25min. 5,554 miles

Me: How will i know that you going to stick to your words?

Cal: You just have to trust me

Me: Trust you? Wow!

Cal: You brought this on yourself

Me: I should have never got involved with you

Cal: but you did!

Me: And i regret it

Cal: Trust me you still going to regret it

Me: How does it work? You put the drugs in my bag?

Cal: Trust me i don't want you to get caught

Me: Talking as if like you care

Cal: I do care that's why i going to make sure that you don't get caught

I didn't say anything..

Cal: Go home so you can get some rest, your flight leaves very early tomorrow

I cannot believe that i am going to be trafficking drugs, this is not me.

I walked out to my car. I got inside and cried.. My life is over.

53

THERESA

How i got myself into this i don't know, how i am going to get myself out i don't know either. All i was chasing after was just Love but unfortunately i loved the wrong man...

In the morning Calvin came with everything that I was going to need, i wonder how he stashed the drugs.

He took out black heels and handed them to me.

Him: I stashed the coke inside the sole of these heels, that's why they are thick.

I took them..

Him: There's coke that's worth a million in there so do not fuck up

It still wasn't registering to me that i was doing this, i still cannot believe that i was going through with it..

Him: Your passport and everything

I took the documents..

Him: you only going to spend one day in London, the following day you off to Mexico. When you get to the airport someone will be waiting for you so that they can take you were you supposed to sleep

He had it all figured out..

Him: any questions?

I shook my head no..

Him: Put on the heels, i will drive you to the airport

You don't know how i was feeling at the moment, this is the man who once said he loves me who is doing all of this to me. I was hurting, i was hurting because i didn't understand why he was doing this to me..

I kept on looking at him as he concentrated on the road, i needed to know what went wrong..

Him: If you have something to say then say it

I had not much to say, i didn't even know what to say. I was still trying to understand what was happening, i was still hoping that he would do a Uturn and then we drive back home.

Him: You just need to pull this off then you will be fine

Me: I will be fine?

Him: Yes

Me: No i won't be fine Calvin! I won't be fine because the man that i love is the one doing all of this to me!

Him: You left me with no choice Theresa! You chose them over me, over us

Me: I cannot change who i am

Advertisement

same way you cannot change who you are

Him: I could've changed

Me: Who are you kidding? You are the devil and the devil never changes

He kept quiet and concentrated on the road, I prayed in my heart that if i get through this i want nothing to do with Calvin or any other man for that matter...

We finally arrived at the airport, he didn't come inside with me though.

Him: This is it

I held my bag very tight..

Him: Try to run away she will die, try to do anything stupid she will die!

Me: i got and understood that clear the first time you told me

Him: Good! My contact will let me know when you have landed

I left him there and walked inside..

Him: Not even a goodbye hug or kiss?

Is he serious? Is he really serious??

.

.

CALVIN

After dropping Theresa off i got back inside my car and drove home. I felt at peace, i felt happy. I was very happy that if i can't have her then no one else is going to have her.

I even played music while I was at it, i felt good about the whole situation. Label me all kinds of things, call me evil all you like but when evil has been shown to you over and over you tend to become evil..

My phone rang, i checked it and it was Sway..

Me: Yeah?

Sway: How did it go?

Me: She's on her way to London hopefully

Sway: What do you mean hopefully?

Me: If she follows orders and pulls through everything she should be fine

Sway: I still don't understand why you doing this to a girl that you dated, a girl that you claim to love

Me: I do love her i am doing this because i love her

Sway: I am failing to understand your definition of love

Me: you wouldn't but trust me it's for the best

Sway: Best for who? You or her?

Me: for the both of us at least her relationship with her precious Prophet would come to an end

Sway: You really think they having an affair?

Me: I don't think so i know so!

.

.

THERESA

I was on the plane to London, after all the security check and everything my heart can now relax. I have gotten away this here, but i have two more stops. Will i able to pull this through? I hope i do or else my little sister is going to die and it will all be my fault. I laid back on my chair with my hand on the pendant of my chain, i closed my eyes and imagined how peaceful my life would've been had i chosen to stay in the waters. I was scared of losing my siblings, i was scared of losing Cal but it seems like i lost them either way..

THERESA

After what seemed like forever, i finally arrived in London. Everything was going well at the airport, there was no drugs in my bag or anything so it has to be an easy process. The heels were a bit heavy i won't lie but taking them off now might be a bit suspicious, the only thing standing between me and my freedom, Is if the dogs come my way but at the security officers kept them busy in sniffing the luggage suitcases...

I was soo adamant that everything was going well until more than one official checked my passport and the other documents that I was carrying, i started to get a bit scared because i went through all this security check and everything seemed fine but now a passport is going to be the reason why i get held up?

I retained a nerve wrecking smile.

Me: Is everything okay?

The lady looked at me..

Her: please come with me

Calvin had better not fucked up my passport, and the documents.

I was led into this private room to be interviewed, all my belongings were given to me except for the documents.

Her: you from South Africa?

Me: Yes

She checked my documents again..

Her: It states here that you would only be staying in London for one day

Me: That's true

Her: You a Doctor?

That was new..

Me: Uhm

Her: Doctor without borders?

I swallowed hard, i should've checked the documents..

Me: Yeeeeees

She nodded..

Her: Where is your stop after here?

Me: Mexico i am actually here for a connecting flight to Mexico tomorrow

Her: What would you be doing there?

Me: critical case that requires my expertise

Her: sounds serious

Me: It is

She looked at the documents again..

Her: Everything seems to be in place i apologize but we had to make sure and know the reason for your one day stay here in London

Me: Of course I am not complaining

She gave me back all those documents..

Me: Thank you

Her: I hope you will enjoy your stay even if it's short

Me: Me too

I stood up took my bag and went

Advertisement

hoping those security offers don't come anywhere near me with the dogs..

I was informed that just outside i will find a lady holding a sign that's written "Theresa" and indeed i did see her, she was leaning against a car. I made my way to her..

Her: Theresa?

Me: Yes

She extended her hand to me..

Her: Agnes

Me: Nice to meet you

She took my bag and went to put it in the trunk of the car..

She was a pretty black lady, probably in her early 30s..

Her: How was your flight?

Me: Pretty exhausting

We got inside the car..

Her: I know, it was like that with me the first time i came here

Me: you live here?

Her: i travel a lot

Me: ohw

Her: How do you know Barca?

Me: We.. He... I just know him

Her: I will ask no further

Me: and how do you know him?

Her: We used to go out i was a call girl at the Dash hotel once

Me: Fascinating so now you travel?

Her: Yes i am a mule been one for a year now

Me: Wow and you haven't been caught?

Her: Not at all have to be really smart about this things

Me: Seems so

Her: Something to eat?

Me: No thank you, all i wanna do now is just sleep

Her: Okay then we will drive to the flat

I made it to London without being caught, now i have to make it to Mexico tomorrow then i will be done..

.

.

CALVIN

I was on a work date that night with my Assistant, we had gone to the Dash hotel to have dinner and also talk about business how we can bring more clients because honestly we are going down the drain..

Me: You look beautiful

She blushed..

Her: Thank you

Me: should we order something to drink while we discuss everything?

Her: Yes we can do that

I raised my hand up and one of the waitresses came..

Her: Good evening

Me: we would like a bottle of wine dry red to be exact

Her: i will bring it.. Anything else?

Me: Not yet we still browsing through the menu

Her: very well

She walked away....

Me: Didn't your boyfriend or husband wonder were you going at night dressed like that?

Her: I am actually single

Me: who would've thought

Her: I am mostly about work so i don't get much time to socialize

Me: That's very bad because you a lovely woman

Her: another compliment.. Thank you

The waitress came with the bottle of wine...

Her: Here you go

Me: Thank you

Her: I will come again to check if you ready to order

She gave us our space..

Me: would you like a glass of wine?

Her: Yes please

As i opened the bottle of wine my phone rang.. I checked who it was and it was Agnes..

Me: Sorry i have to take this

I stood up and walked out..

Me: Hello

Agnes: Barca

Me: and?

Agnes: she did arrive

Me: that's a relief.. How is she?

Agnes: tired and a bit nervous

Me: I would be nervous too

Agnes: I will call you again tomorrow when she gets on that flight to Mexico

Me: Very well

Agnes: uhm..

Me: Yes?

Agnes: She seems like a pretty nice girl why would you wanna set her up like that?

Me: I have my reasons

Agnes: I'll call you again tomorrow morning

Me: You do that

.

.

THERESA

I haven't prayed since all of this happened, it's not that i didn't wanna pray but i felt like i would be disrespecting God should i ask for protection in something like this. How is trafficking drugs a good thing? How can God protect me from this sinful act? A lot of thoughts crowded my mind as i thought about this whole situation. How did i get myself into this situation? I wish i never met Calvin, i wish i never let the devil into my life..

I closed my eyes with tears falling, tomorrow should come already so that i can be done with everything.

THERESA

I thought that i had everything in the bag, i mean it had ran smoothly back in London Even here it's supposed to run smoothly. It's not everyday that heels come up being the secret component that Harbours drugs, i have heard of a few stories on how mules get caught. Swallowing the drugs is no longer smart, putting them in the suitcase down underneath the component no longer is smart, nothing is ever smart anymore but how Calvin and his people stashed them that was very smart. The night before Agnes took me through she told me that sometimes you get caught by just looking nervous, some of the security officials are trained to notice body changes and how one acts when they are nervous. She told me i should keep my cool, don't smile a lot and don't look agitated that might attract attention that one doesn't want..

In the flight to Mexico i was pretty nervous, i got through very easily in London will i get through this??

I have heard once that Mexico is very dangerous, i do hope i get through this just this once more..

I finally arrived at Ciudad Juárez International Airport in Mexico, i am a bit nervous no make that i am very nervous. First of all i don't know the language that they speak, and will this be as

easy as it was back in London? I am questioning myself so bad that i felt someone pushing me a little, i realized that I was stopping the queue i had to move..

The same tradition was carried out, my bag going into the Xray machine i had to go through the metal detector everything seemed to be going fine i have this in the bag, what could possibly go wrong?

They checked my passport and my documents

Advertisement

i got my bag and i get "Bienvenido a Mexico" (Welcome to Mexico). I am so glad and relieved that everything has gone well, i cannot wait to get out of there and meet with the person that I was supposed to meet. Unfortunately i was called back before i could even get far. I looked back and i saw some man wearing a suit he was standing with two security officials..

At first i thought they probably calling someone else and not me, but they were looking straight at me and the man in the suit was busy indicating that i must come to them..

I turned around then walked back to them, all in all i am praying that let it be a miscommunication with regards to my passport and documents. My heart was beating rapidly, my hands were sweating i felt hot flushes and my stomach was turning in..

I got to them and i smiled while shaking..

Him: Passport

I went through my bag and gave him the passport and documents.

Him: Por que has venido aqui?

I don't understand what he is saying..

Me: Sorry i.. I speak English

Him: Why have you come here in Mexico?

Me: I.. It says there that.. I cleared my throat

Him: You a doctor?

I nodded repeatedly...

Him: What business does a Doctor from so far in South Africa has here in Mexico?

Me: Do.. Doctors without boarders

He looked at me for a while..

Him: can we check your bag?

Me: Uhm Yes of course

I gave them my bag and they started searching it, they took out everything from it and they were squeezing it. They just thoroughly searched it but came out with nothing...

He looked at one of the security guys..

Him: Búsquela (search her)

Without any communication the security came to me and started to frisk me he even went as far as squeezing my breasts, touching my ass and it made me very uncomfortable..

Security: Nada (Nothing)

They put everything in my bag and handed it to me, i snatched it and started walking away..

Him: Lo siento señorita! (sorry miss)

I stopped one more time and looked at him..

Him: Quítate los zapatos por favor (take off your shoes please)

He said that while pointing at my heels and i knew what he meant, he didn't have to translate it..

Him: Shoes please

Me: What do you want with my shoes?

Him: check them

Me: Why?

Him: they are very big shoes

Me: Yes they are a brand and very expensive

Him: shoes please

There is no way out..

I looked at them again..

Me: No i refuse!

Him: don't make it hard

At that point my heart beat was now very abnormal..

Him: we just wanna see them

I took them off and handed them to him..

Him: My office please

I followed him to his office with the guards..

Him: Sentar (sit)

He pointed at the chair and I sat down..

He took a knife and tried stabbing one heel..

Me: What are you doing? They expensive!

He ignored me and continued, until he got the sole out and pills fell. I closed my eyes..

Him: What is this?

I looked at him..

Me: I have no idea

He got some kit and tested one pill, the solution changed colour..

Him: uhhhhh Cocaine

I knew then that I was screwed..

Him: You bring cocaine In Mexico? You die!

He was laughing in my face..

This was not happening, this was not happening to me!

.

.

CALVIN

I had Sway storm into my office that afternoon all worked up..

Sway: What happened?

Me: with?

Sway: My client hasn't received the package! What happened to your Mule?

Me: She must've got caught at the airport

Sway: I thought that you had the most perfect plan Barca!

Me: I did she just fucked up, you know how they are

I went back to what I was doing and he kept quiet.. I looked at him.

Me: What?

Him: You used my merchandise worth a Mill to set your girlfriend up didn't you?

Me: Mules get caught Sway it's no big deal

Sway: it is a big deal! You bit me in the Ass! I fucken trusted you I kept quiet..

Him: You will pay for this Barca!

He clicked his tongue and walked away..

The smile i had on my face knowing that Theresa could be banged up abroad, called for a celebration.

THERESA

We have been in his office going over the same thing again and again that I was literally drained, i had cried a lot that tears weren't coming out anymore they had dried out.. I was asked who I am working for, i gave them Calvin's name and phone number they called him but he wasn't answering. They thought i was just toying with them...

This guy who was busy questioning me off which i only found out later that his surname is Fernandez, and doesn't take lightly into people trafficking drugs into Mexico was busy telling me that i am going to get a death sentence. He told me that they have put to death a lot of Mules just to set an example, he promised me that i will never go back home..

A lot of thoughts were going through my mind, i haven't had anything to eat the whole day and now it was even getting a bit late.

Him: ¿Para quién trabajas?

He has repeated that over and over that i knew what it meant now, and it meant "who are you working for"

Me: I told you Calvin Barca!!

He kicked me on the chest and i fell backwards with the chair, the back of my head came into contact with the floor. It was a pretty skull cracking impact i almost blacked out immediately, the light on the ceiling became blurry..

Him: ¿Para quién trabajas? (who are you working for)

The door opened and i turned my head, i could swear that i saw the police judging from the uniform in my semi dizzy state..

Fernandez: Ella fue encontrada con cocaína (she was found with cocaine)

The Police didn't say anything they came to me and got me up

Advertisement

i looked at Fernandez one last time and I will never forget the smirk on his face..

.

.

CALVIN

Things are really looking out for me, Agnes called me to confirm that indeed Theresa was busted in Mexico with drugs. Call me evil all you want but i couldn't let myself lose her to another man. I took my briefcase and made my way out of my office, i

was headed to the elevator until i saw my assistant at her desk.
I went up to her...

Me: Working late?

Her: Yes i think that i have a way to keep the clients that we currently have from leaving

Me: I am all ears

Her: Unfortunately i don't kiss and tell Mr Barca

I laughed..

Me: How did i move from being Calvin last night to being Mr Barca tonight?

Her: You are my boss and i would like to keep things professional

Me: Playing hard to get i see

Her: It's not hard to get if it's true

Me: how about we go out for drinks?

Her: Another date?

Me: It's called taking a break

She inhaled deeply while still lookin at PC..

Her: I will pass

Me: you are more hard to get than..

Her: than?

Me: No one

Her: sounded like someone

Me: It's no one... So are you up for a couple of drinks?

I heard the elevator opening, Sway came out with one Police officer and Sterling..

I thought he "took care" of Sterling..

Me: Sway i didn't..

Sway: cuff him

The officer came to me and started cuffing me..

Me: what the hell is going on?

Sway: You are under arrest Mr Barca

I chuckled in disbelief..

Sway: You are under arrest for administering cocaine into a pill that took many lives and endangered many more, you are under arrest for kidnapping two minors and attempted murder on the other one Zerra Mendoza

Me: wtf?? I don't understand!

Sway: do you know how long i have waited for this? to avenge my Parent's death?

Me: So you played me all along?

Sway: How does it feel now when you the one who is betrayed?

Me: You have no proof

Sway: ohh i do i have two witnesses who are willing to testify against you, one is your right hand man and the other one is my wife

My assistant stood up and went to Sway..

Her: I am relieved that i no longer will be working for this heartless bastard!

He hugged her..

Sway: You did good sweetheart

Me: You Son of a bitch!!

Sway: and don't forget we have a mule in Mexico that i am working on bringing back to SA so she can testify against you! I don't wanna mention the video of Zerra with a bomb strapped around her

Me: You will implicate yourself like that?

Sway: what are you talking about? I wasn't there when you put the little girl's life in danger plus social services is the one who opened the case against you after i sent the video to Carol

Sterling: Before i forget Prophet Zaine said i should give you a message

I looked at him..

Him: He said this is what happens when heaven retaliates for messing with their own

I tried to break free from the officer but i couldn't...

Sway: You have the right to remain silent anything you say can and will be used against you in the court of law...

This is it, i was screwed!..

.

.

THERESA

I was taken to what seemed like a holding cell, it was very dark inside there. They opened the bars and threw me inside...

Police: Dormirás aquí esta noche (you will sleep here tonight)

I laid on the ground very weak and dizzy, i also had a sharp headache. I don't think i will make it through the night, can i die now and let this nightmare be over.

57

CALVIN

I was pacing up and down in the holding cell that night thinking of a way out of this situation, this cannot be happening to me. I am Calvin Barca for fuck's sake! I have been running the pharmaceutical company for many years now, Yes i have been caught a few times but i always managed to get myself out of those situations. I looked at my hands they were handcuffed, Sway played it well this time around. I didn't even know my Assistant was his wife and only worked for me because she was trying to help put me behind bars for a long time, and Sterling? What the fuck is his story??

This isn't real, this isn't real at all..

Sway has such incriminating evidence against me, i hope my lawyer can pull this off..

The bars opened, Sway walked in..

Me: Well played Sway now get me the fuck out of here!

Sway: This is not a joke, this is not a game!

Me: You can't fucken do this!

Sway: Yes i can! You know what your problem was or is? You fucken thought that you are untouchable, you thought you are a god Barca but unfortunately you just another human being!

Me: I have money i will get my lawyer on this and i will be home free!

Sway: Calvin it took me years and patience to build a concrete case against you, all along you thought that you were beating me but all along i have been building this moment. Patience does indeed bring great rewards, when you set up your girlfriend i knew i won! You thought you were fucking up her life but you were fuckin up yours. Calvin you must understand how life works, sometimes when you try to do bad unto others the bad comes back to you multiple times

I sat on the bench..

Him: Theresa is a vital part of this case her testimony against you is the one that's going to get you locked up for a very long time

Me: That's if you are able to get her back here, last I checked Mexico has a new law now. Drug trafficking is punishable by death and i don't see the state using money and resources to bring a mule back home, how many Mules from SA are banged up abroad?

Sway: But you forgetting one thing, Theresa is not just any other Mule. She is a mule and a critical piece of the puzzle to put the most notorious drug dealer behind bars, The state won't hesitate to bring her back home

Me: That can only happen if she's not already sentenced to death or life, Mexican Law is the most strict law. Getting her here is going to take a while good luck Detective

Sway: You forgetting something i am a commander in chief, i have been working on your case undercover as a "Detective" I am the resources

Me: Sup Sway

Advertisement

how charming?

Him: You don't know for how long i have been waiting for this moment

The bars opened..

Sway: One more thing don't try anything stupid like having her killed in Prison she has protection

Me: Really?

Sway: I am not a religious person and yet i don't mock God, whoever God that girl is serving is bigger than yours. My station and i we tried to get you all these years, and she managed to do it in less than a year! But again she goes to Purgatory right? Now she brought Purgatory to you! If you know what i mean..

He laughed and walked out, i wiped my face with my hands. I had no plans anymore, the only plan i have now is to try and smooth things over with Theresa so that she doesn't testify against me.. I need to make her believe in the love that we once had..

.

.

THERESA

The following day i was taken down to the big prison, i haven't showered, the only meal i had was a roll and a bottle of steel water. I was also given

two pain killers for my headache..

The prison looked highly secured, guards in every corner holding guns. They had an electric fence that went all over, the walls were very high and some of the guards were with dogs.. The women around there gave me deadly looks as i passed them, by now I was handed over to the female guards. I wasn't taken to the cell right away, I was escorted to some small room where I found another guard inside.

I saw a chair, and a basin that had water.. The other guards left leaving me in the room with the one we found there.

Her: Desnudo (undress)

I looked at her, she started signaling with her hands that i need to take off my clothes. I shook my head no..

Her: Desnudarte sentarte allí (undress and seat there)

She pointed at the chair..

Me: No..

She looked at me for a while and then walked out, i looked around the room and there wasn't a way out. Even if i could try to run but I won't get far..

She came back after a while with some white woman who was wearing green pants and a green vest with flops..

Her: Hi my name is Anne

Me: Theresa

She was fluent in English, the guard looked at her..

Guard: Dile el procedimiento (tell her the procedure)

Anne: You have to undress and sit on the chair with your legs spread so she can do external examination on you

Me: Why?

Anne: To make sure that you not hiding drugs in some parts of your body

I shook my head no..

Anne: If you don't she will call the male guards to come and hold you down do you want men to see your naked body? If they do and they find you attractive they might sexually violate you. Male guards should never see you naked around here or else they will make you their sex slave

I looked at the guard and she looked serious..

Anne: When you done you will wear the green prisoner's uniform

I slowly took off my clothes until I was completely naked..

Guard: El collar (the necklace)

Anne looked at me..

Anne: The Necklace

Me: I can't take it off

Anne: You have too

Me: You don't understand it reminds me of who I am

Anne looked at the guard..

Anne: Ella no puede quitarlo, es sentimental (she can't take it off, it's sentimental)

Guard: Reglas son reglas (rules are rules)

Anne: Es sólo un collar (It's just a necklace)

Guard: Otros prisioneros lo roban (the other prisoners will steal it)

Anne looked at me..

Anne: You going to lose it either way, the other prisoners are going to steal it

I took it off and looked at it, i disconnected the pendant and opened it. I drank the water that was inside... Then i dropped the chain down and the broken pendant...

The guard pointed at the chair..

Anne: I'll wait outside

Me: No.. I want you here

I felt like i can trust Anne..

She nodded.

I went and sat on the chair and opened my legs very wide..

The guard washed her hands, she then came and inserted two fingers deep inside my vagina it was very uncomfortable. I closed my eyes and bit my lower lip..

I don't think i will ever forgive Barca for what he is putting me through..

58

CALVIN

1 MONTH LATER

Prison was just not for me i am at the verge of exhausting my money to buy protection, my Lawyer is not cheap either, i have been denied bail and my trial is close. This is not like the last time i have been busted where i only get away with a slap on the wrist, this time around i am facing critical charges and i might be locked up for a very long time..

My lawyer came to see me, i hope he has good news..

Him: You don't look good

Me: I am not used to a place like this

Him: How is the treatment?

Me: for now im fine because i can buy myself protection but for how long?

Him: Your funds are not looking good at all

Me: what's the latest on Theresa?

Him: Still locked up today it's her sentencing

Me: She is going to get a death sentence

Him: I wouldn't bet my money on that just as yet

Me: Why?

Him: Sway has flew to Mexico to try and get her back

Me: Shit!

Him: Mexican law is very strict we just have to hope that the judge doesn't see it that way and decides to keep her there until your trial comes into pass

Theresa has the potential of making me to be locked up behind bars for a very long time, i can't even get someone there to touch her.

Me: How is my case looking?

Him: It's not looking good Calvin you facing a lot of charges you will have to plead guilty

Me: I am not pleading guilty

Him: Then you will get life

Me: If i plead guilty how many years am i gonna get?

Him: i will fight for at least 30 years

Me: that's still too much, this Prison is dangerous i don't think i will survive any longer

Him: I am not God Calvin that's the best that i can do

Me: Fine

Him: I hope i am going to get fully paid for my services

Me: Yes you will

Him: I mean you are running out of money the last time i checked

Me: I will pay you

Him: I will take your word for it

The guard signaled that our time is up..

Me: I will see you tomorrow

Him: Yes we have to discuss the trial and your defense

Me: See you tomorrow then

I stood up and the guard came to walk me back into my cell..

.

.

THERESA

Life in Prison is not as easy as i thought it would be, the living conditions are not good. We are 15 in a small cell, the food is disgusting, we shower with dirty water, it's just not an acceptable way for a human being to live. The first few days were very difficult for me i had problems adapting, but as time went on i had too. Again what choice did I have?

Anne is a very good friend to me she has been teaching me Spanish, has been teaching me about what i should and shouldn't do. She is originally from Cape Town was busted a few years ago and she has already served 4 years of her 9 years sentence

Advertisement

just 5 years left and she will be going home. This morning I was going to stand in front of the judge and hear my fate, even though i have messed up a lot but i have been praying and keeping my faith strong. I have asked for forgiveness and i was asking for a last chance, just one last chance. My cell mates wished me luck as i was going to the court room, i wanted to bring along Anne but unfortunately I will have to face this alone..

On my way to the court i was praying i cannot die like this it's not right, the devil cannot win. The devil cannot win at all..

We arrived at the court room and on my side i saw two white gentlemen. It was surprising because I didn't think that i was going to be afforded a lawyer..

I made my way to them..

One gentleman stood up....

Him: Theresa?

Me: Yes

Him: I am Superintendent Sway and this is Mr Botha he is a lawyer

Me: You guys are not from here

Sway: No we from South Africa and we here to help you so that you can go home

I didn't know what to say..

Sway: I have been building a strong case against Calvin Barca for a very long time now, finally i got him he is behind bars and he can remain there for a very long time if only I can get you back home to testify against him on the day of his trial

That was shocking, Barca is arrested?

The judge made his way in, we sat down.. I was still trying to understand what Sway said, Barca is arrested??

The judge went through my file for a while..

Judge: Miss Theresa Mendoza please stand up

I stood up. His English accent wasn't the best but at least I can understand him..

Him: bringing in drugs to Mexico is a huge offense that is punishable by death we have put to death a lot of drug mules over the years.

I swallowed hard..

Judge: I have sat down with your defense team and they have explained everything to me about how you were set up and that the Mexican law should Pardon you so that you can go and testify against the most notorious drug lord in South Africa who set you up

He paused a little..

Him: Unfortunately i cannot allow you to leave, you have to serve at least 12 years because at the end of the day you committed the crime here in our country

Mr Botha stood up..

Botha: Your Honour may i please be granted permission to speak?

Judge: Yes

Botha: I understand that she has committed crime here but she has to go back home in a few months to testify she is a very important piece to the case that has been built against Mr Barca for a very long time

Judge: I understand but please respect our law as much as we respect yours. Miss Mendoza was supposed to be sentenced to death but because of the evidence brought forward that she was set up and forced to do this to save her sister i had mercy

on her and gave her 12 years she can even serve 4 years of her sentence and then go home. She won't have to serve the remainder of her sentence back in South Africa

That was better, that was better than the death sentence that I was facing..

Judge: Court adjourned

Sway: Dammit!!! What are we going to do now? I cannot let Barca walk away a free man

This was not right, these gentlemen traveled far to come and save me. To give me my freedom back...

Me: Can i ask something?

They looked at me..

Me: what if i write my testimony of what happened and you present it in court will that work?

Sway looked at Botha..

Botha: If signed by the authorities here and has a stamp it might work the airport will also have time give a statement of how they court you with drugs

Sway: At least not all is lost

Me: Thank you again i am truly grateful

Sway: You don't deserve what happened to you Barca needs to pay for this

Botha gave me a pen and a paper to write, this time around i am hoping the devil Barca will be put away in hell were he belongs...

59

CALVIN

2 YEARS LATER

The pain that was arising from my left rib was the most excruciating thing I have ever felt, all the while i have put my hand there but still the blood wasn't stopping. I was bleeding profusely..

I was rushed to the hospital i was very weak and very dizzy. What happened? How did i find myself with a stab wound?

My expectations with the trial was that i was going to get at least 30 years as how my Lawyer said it because Theresa wasn't here to testify against me. I thought that I was going to make it home free with Parole, but unfortunately her testimony was brought forth. My trial took months that my money was exhausted on my lawyer who tried his level best to come through for me but nothing could've been done to save me, therefore i was sentenced to life in prison and I am only eligible for parole when i have served 50 years. Going back behind bars after i had been sentenced was not a walk in the park, i had no money to buy protection anymore and everyday i had to fight for survival. You sleep but you can never achieve that peaceful sleep, you don't know who has it for you and might wanna kill you in your sleep. I have always been powerful, i have always

been respected, but here i am today i have to respect and take orders from someone else. This is the 4th time i have been stabbed this month all because of minor arguments, for how long will this go on until I lose my life completely??

I am left to regret the decisions i made in life, i shouldn't have played an innocent heart. Her tears, her pain is what I am suffering for today. The devil i have served faithfully all these years was nowhere to be found, but then again you dance for his music but when you in trouble you find yourself alone he will go and get someone else. Indeed no bad deed goes unpunished, I didn't know that one day i would find myself here Locked up...

I AM CALVIN BARCA AND THIS HAS BEEN MY STORY.

THERESA

I was finally let go after serving two years, when Calvin was sentenced they had no reason to keep me. The judge had reviewed my case and found reason to let me go, go back home where i belonged. At first I thought it was a joke but when I finally set foot on my home ground i knew that I was free. It took me such a painful experience to realize that no matter how much you try but you can never love the devil, I tried changing Calvin but his heart was too consumed by evil. This has been a great lesson for me, i am taking a break from dating and i am going to focus on me, my siblings, and my spirituality. I

am fully committed into going to schools and teaching young people about the dangers of drug trafficking, the unsettling conditions of foreign prisons. I wanted to them to know that although my sins were pardoned, but with them they might not be so lucky..

CJ: I still can't believe Barca did that

Me: Sometimes you think you know a person but you actually don't

CJ: I am sorry that you had to go through that

Me: All that matters is that i am back and i am not going anywhere

Carol has made it clear that this is the last time my Siblings are being returned to me, If i mess up again they will take them away forever..

What has changed in my life is that i have decided to get my matric, i am working very hard to get it and study further so that I can get a good job. Dash hotel is what brought about the pain and struggles, If i wasn't a cleaner there then i wouldn't have met Calvin..

I hope that you have learned something from my story, the devil can take it all from you but never allow him to take away your faith. Faith is what keeps you going, Faith is what you should never lose.. Pray at your worst, pray even when you

think it's useless. Never allow the devil to defeat you, never allow him to make you think that faith and prayer are useless. God is Love and God's love will never leave you, not now not ever.

I AM THERESA MENDOZA AND THIS WAS MY STORY.

.

.....**THE END**.....

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends. Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.